



The Allied Japanese Conspiracy

The Allied Japanese Conspiracy

BY

JAMES MACKAY



The Pentland Press
Edinburgh – Cambridge – Durham – USA

© James Mackay, 1995

First published in 1995
by The Pentland Press Ltd
1 Hutton Close
South Church
Bishop Auckland
Durham

All rights reserved.
Unauthorised duplication
contravenes existing laws.

British Library
Cataloguing in Publication Data.
A catalogue record for this book
is available from the British Library.

ISBN 1-85821-262-6

M
940.5405
MACK

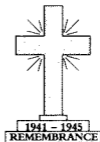
M
923315

Typeset by Carnegie Publishing Ltd, 18 Maynard St, Preston
Printed and bound by Antony Rowe Ltd, Chippenham

17 FEB 1998
Perpustakaan Negara
Malaysia

DEDICATION

Lonely are the shallow graves in many tropic lands
Thousands of victims slaughtered by alien bloodied-hands
Bodies ravaged, disease-ridden or beheaded
Gallant in adversity, sword scorned not dreaded
Like a thief in the night, with cunning and stealth
Armies of rapacious soldiers struck, coveting other nations wealth
With hordes of Japanese screaming banzais to their Mikado's hallowed
name
Swords decapitated, bayonets stabbed, slaughtering all without shame
Peaceful Countries shocked, caught unaware
Then brutalized, intimidated, terrorized with fear
Those pagan sons of Heaven, numerous as locust swarms
Capturing, raping, cannibalizing, ignoring all civilized norms
Terror-camp guards crushing the will to fight
Contemptuous of life and precious human rights
A scourge across nations with the chill touch of death
Torturing and maiming victims to their very last breath
Prisoners squeezed into pig-baskets then thrown to sharks in the sea
Their one crime being, trying to remain free
These Sons of Hell – no apology here
Thriving on murder, rape, hardship and fear
Billions they stole, where is it one might ask
But against duplicity, it would be a hopeless task
Helpless boys imprisoned bestialized in their prime
Just another Jap atrocity of specialized crime
Forced labour camps, hell-holes of sadistic abuse
Guarded by morons with heavy clubs, so expert in their use
Then came the special bombs with a capital A
They stopped the horror and bloodshed, in a most profound way
Two generations have passed since that war most sordid



But only the Japanese – not their victims, were covertly rewarded
Collusion and conspiracy, preventing lawful claims
War crimes absolved, human rights abuses disclaimed
With many war victims deprived and abandoned to fate
Their compensation denied, already for many too late
The Emperor again exalted, his country recovered and strong
What price justice for a nation, that profited from doing wrong??

CONTENTS

	<i>Acknowledgement</i>	ix
	<i>Foreword</i>	xiii
	<i>Preface</i>	xv
1.	Eclipse of the Rising Sun: An Overview	1
2.	General Hideki Tojo	16
3.	The Propaganda War: Deceit and Treachery	23
4.	A Day of Infamy	33
5.	The Horrors of Conquest	41
6.	Captivity: A Chronicle of Cruelty	55
7.	China's Bloodbath	70
8.	Josef Stalin's Revenge	75
9.	Cannibalism: The Stark Truth	90
10.	Singapore: The Island of Genocide	94
11.	The Heroic Netherlands East Indies	100
12.	The Kempetai	110
13.	The Railway of Death	116
14.	Japanese Prisoners of War	123
15.	The Shame of Military Brothels	126

16.	A Compendium of Murder and Human Rights Abuse	132
17.	A Litany of Horror	136
18.	A Banzai of Murder and Revenge	142
19.	The Expediency of Politics: A Post Mortem	151
20.	The Scales of Justice	157
21.	Evidence for the Prosecution	161
22.	The Vagaries of Justice	166
23.	Compensation: The European Way	171
24.	Politics – Law – Evasion	178
25.	Retribution – Education – Human Rights	183
26.	Exit a Tyrant	188
27.	Justice Denied	195
28.	A Conspiracy Analyzed	226
	Postscript. An Imperial Confession	236

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

I would like to express my profound thanks to various persons and organizations who gave their time and knowledge to the compilation of this book. Each in their own way contributed to the various chronicles of collected history that soon through the attrition of time will no longer be available first-hand.

Equally I am indebted to the inhabitants of the Pacific island of Tarawa as well as to the villagers of Nauru for information supplied from eye-witness accounts. During the three years it took to research and gather documentary evidence, my inquiries developed into a global quest that yielded compelling information – well supported by factual accuracy.

The task of writing the Foreword to this book was willingly undertaken by Mr H. C. Zeeman, Chairman of EJOS (NZ) and an authority on the former Netherlands East Indies. As an eye-witness to the Japanese invasion of the NEI his contribution to the Dutch segment of the following chronicles was vivid and articulate, revealing both heroism and terror aptly portrayed as spell-binding. To Mr Zeeman, I am deeply grateful.

With reference to the Japanese germ warfare centre at Ping Fan in central Manchuria, I am grateful to Squadron Leader Evan Julian DFC for his valued recollections of Manchuria where he was a prisoner of war and available (as a human guinea pig) to nearby Ping Fan where medical atrocities of the worst kind were experimented with on humans. By his own reckoning, only the atom bombs and Japan's abrupt surrender, saved his life. It was eye-witness accounts such as his that assisted the veracity of *The Allied Japanese Conspiracy* – a confounding rebuttal to Japanese denials and a challenge to its post-war collaborators. I acknowledge Squadron Leader Evan's contribution with esteem.

The Rt. Hon. Sir Robert Muldoon, CH GCMG PC, Prime Minister of New Zealand 1975 to 1984, was also helpful with advice particularly of a political nature. It is a truism to confirm that he empathized easily with the 'ordinary bloke', and without the constraints of Prime Ministership in his



The Rt. Hon. Sir Robert Muldoon, Prime Minister of New Zealand, 1975-84.

retirement years he spoke his mind freely. Sir Robert was a serving member of the New Zealand Armed Forces during World War Two and was stationed in both the European and Pacific theatres of conflict from where, thanks to his wartime service, copious memorabilia – notes and photos – were freely supplied from that period of history which greatly assisted segments of this historical record.

It is regretted that Sir Robert did not live to see the completion of this book, but I am indebted to his lady-wife, Dame Thea Muldoon, DBE, who continued to provide background information and support essential to the research that as an undertaking, required total accuracy. On three separate occasions and in a genuine desire to assist my research, Dame Thea visited my home – always with some fresh material. I offer my sincere thanks.

The following also deserve my heartfelt thanks. [South Australia]. The Port Pirie RSL (Returned Servicemen). [New Zealand] The Parnell (Auckland) branch of the RSA (Returned Servicemen). The Turnbull Library, Wellington, New Zealand. The National Archives of both Australia and New Zealand. The Hansards of both the Australian and New Zealand Parliaments. The New Zealand Ministry of Foreign Affairs. Osaka University, Japan. The Columban Fathers Monastery, Auckland, New Zealand. The British Imperial War Museum. The United States Information Service – Consular Division. The Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Djakarta, Indonesia. The General and Personnel Enquiries Section, New Zealand Defence Force HQ, Wellington. The Union Steamship Company of New Zealand. And finally, but not least, the Principal (Tom Gerrard) and tutorial staff of Rosmini College, Auckland, NZ.

To each individual and Organization, my grateful thanks for so much information and diverse assistance, that helped my putting together a most challenging book. To one and all, my grateful thanks.

James MacKay



FOREWORD

If anyone ever felt completely frustrated, impotent and furious about destroyed lives and deliberately suppressed grievances, it will be the 'Forgotten People'.

Who are they?

They are made up of a wide diversity of human beings who had the misfortune to endure the hospitality of the Emperor of Japan during his Empire's conquest of Asia and the Pacific, 1941-5, and who then became the political football of their own Governments after the war and ignored ever since.

'The Forgotten People', abused, brutalized and traumatised, became introspective and withdrawn following their release from dreadful captivity, so nightmarish were their experiences at the hands of the Japanese – that is those who survived. Rather than relive their horrifying years of bestial treatment, most preferred to try to banish the experience of a living hell from their minds. The sheer enormity of Human Rights Abuses suffered, were not believed by their compatriots who found it difficult to comprehend such genocidal hatred being directed at their fellow countrymen by the Japanese and which was subsequently down-played and suppressed by their own Governments. Thus was induced the 'Let Us Forget' mentality.

During the early years after Japan's ignominious surrender and for some decades later, 'The Forgotten People' discovered that Germany was making a conscious effort to make amends to victims of the Third Reich with meaningful compensation while Japan obstinately declined. This perverse refusal by the Japanese had its origins in a peace treaty that was conspired in 1952 by the Allied Powers – notably the United States. Subsequent representations to Japan for compensation – over many long years, have met with stubborn resistance supported by the former Allied Governments with a deliberate policy of apathy and stonewalling.

To have to wait fifty years for compensation from a defeated aggressor nation – that profited from its evil war, clearly shows an utter disregard and unrepentant

attitude for the carnage and destruction wreaked by the Imperial Japanese Army in its bloody war of conquest. Only a nation that has no shame or honour could callously pursue a policy of global expansion and empire building with so much blood on its hands.

Therefore, because Japan deliberately chooses to ignore its past murderous history, the time has come to declare 'enough is enough'. The following chronicles of recent history, recounted in a populist and accessible dialogue, suggest not only Japan's ambition to conquer the world – militarily or economically, but also its deep-seated recourse to duplicity and intransigence as and where occasion demands.

Above all else, the pursuit of long-awaited justice for the scores of thousands of Anzacs, GIs, Tommys, Dutch and Canadians, is the dedication to which this book is committed. Japan should be reminded forcibly that it must face up to its past dreadful history and compensate its millions of wartime victims or their next of kin with the same resolution and commitment as the Federal Republic of Germany. The time for prevarication and deviousness is over.

It has been my privilege to contribute first-hand accounts of the Japanese invasion of the Netherlands East Indies where I was captured as a young boy and imprisoned for three and a half years. The author has ably narrated my experiences, but in his summation has been somewhat lenient towards the Japanese – they were far worse than the book describes. POWs and civilians suffered hellish brutality at the hands of the Japanese. That is why I name these victims 'The Forgotten Ones'.

H. C. Zeeman.

PREFACE

The period 1941 to 1945 was an era in history remembered best as *anni horribili* by those unfortunate enough to have endured captivity under the merciless tyranny of the Japanese. But now, and since the passing of that dreadful period, previously unknown instances of Human Rights Abuse – mostly concealed by the Japanese and covered-up by the former Allied Powers, have been exposed. As a consequence, this book has been compiled to refresh the memories of the former Allied Governments and the Japanese, to remind them that the horrific crimes against humanity barbarically executed by Japan's Armed Forces, have neither been addressed, compensated nor forgotten, and that no matter the obstinacy encountered, it is an undying human problem that will never go away.

For many years former prisoners of war, civilian and military, have tried ceaselessly to obtain just compensation for Japanese brutalities that included every type of criminal or immoral perversion affecting human rights known to mankind. It is bad enough that Japan remains obstinately opposed to confronting its bloody past, but for Allied politicians to aid and abet this intransigency – by refusing to assist the compensation claims of their respective war veterans and civilians who survived 'Japanese benevolence', is absolutely despicable.

Therefore from 1994 onwards, it is timely to remind politicians that, in a renewed campaign for justice, a period of *anni pusillanii* – with all that it implies, including Law Courts and the United Nations, will ensure that the exhumation of past war crimes and the intransigency and greed of the Japanese, along with Allied perfidy, will be revisited in the pursuit of justice long denied. The Allied politicians are perfectly aware of Japanese slave-labour camps, death marches, rapes, beheadings, cannibalism, torture, maiming, etc. but, perversely, they will not help their own nationals in claims for belated and just compensation. Thus, the title of this book sums up the sentiments of those who survived Japan's barbaric war as well as saluting the heroism of scores of thousands who did not

survive captivity, but who perished at the hands of an uncivilized and ruthless enemy.

Japan has, ever since its ignominious surrender, been pampered and succoured back to prosperity by its former adversaries – though not so its former war victims. They have been cast aside as an irritating nuisance and of penultimate consideration when viewed in context with Japan's renewed expansionist programme as per its wartime objectives.

The Western Powers would have to be aware of Japan's previous human rights abuses and its stubborn unwillingness to pay compensation, but as if by some secret pact, have stubbornly maintained a pusillanimity of purpose that has endured since the signing of a most questionable treaty with Japan. This inertia could be construed as paralysis by analysis or, that the Allies themselves had something to hide. Perhaps Article 14 of this 'convenient' treaty compels their caution. But then, if any country signed away the 'Universal Human Rights' of its citizens, wonder not at the ensuing conspiracy of silence.

Then, too, is the latent psychology attached to the very real importance of not offending the Japanese? Economically, the West has nurtured Japan's industrial success to the point where it has now become monolithic and awesomely independent. 'Whatever the cost, we must not upset the Japanese,' is the frightened catch-cry. Such appeasing consideration deserves to be strongly denounced. It has allowed might to triumph over right, but where high finance and political expediency are involved, isn't this usually the case?

A writer has a duty when researching historical fact. He or she must convey the feeling and the moment in analogies gathered, but where detracting circumsppection has no part, and where unbridled truth contests censorship. Then if it is for the good of society, facts, no matter how distressing, should be presented concisely, positively and without hindrance. In other words, the line between fair and unfair comment should be drawn for the public good and not for the protection of injustice or its supporters. This premise is so upheld by law, and should be upheld by those entrusted to apply the law, whether they be elected representatives of the people, preside over Courts or deliberate in the jury-room. With these observations in mind, the chronicles recounted in this book have been carefully collated.

The Allied Japanese Conspiracy substantially portrays a very difficult and provocative segment of history that for many years has been shielded by a veil of silence – not to protect the innocent, but to cocoon Japan from any possibility

of compensation claims for human rights abuses from its hundreds of thousands of war victims.

This obligation, deviously evaded, was surreptitiously assisted by the terms of the 1952 San Francisco Peace Treaty that illegally exonerated this liability.

Only through truth can justice be served. Therefore, one can only dwell on the fact that the oppressed Allied war victims have endured double jeopardy through this perfidious 'Treaty' which has in effect, been a second abuse of their human and civil rights.



I

THE ALLIED JAPANESE CONSPIRACY AN OVERVIEW

Prologue

More than half a century has passed since Japan entered the Second World War with dramatic and telling effect. It is for this reason that, with the attrition of time, a review of events subsequent to Japan's participation be evaluated. Earlier documentation by historians and authors addressed those matters that were known, particularly following the findings of the War Crimes Tribunals. In every instance of documented evidence, a sordid litany of horrific deeds emerged. Thus, by 1955, magazines, books and newspapers had continuously and faithfully informed public interest to a point where there seemed little more to tell.

The demise of the Third Reich and its atrocities against mankind in the same era, equally gripped world attention but unlike Japan, its countless acts of inhumanity and the perpetrators singularly identified, made world news well into the sixties. Japan, so far as public interest was concerned, has been exculpated by virtue of a peace treaty signed in 1952. A number of countries, led by the United States of America, concluded this peace treaty with Japan that among other considerations, exonerated it from all claims in respect of damage and suffering inflicted by its war of aggression.

In the eyes of many, this peace treaty was a hasty affair and by its enactment, deprived hundreds of thousands of war victims of just redress. The determining factor precipitating this accord will, in a later dissertation, be examined but not justified. Political expediency, ever an irascible consideration, was the driving influence hastening this non-consultative act of convenience in so far as the interest of war victims were concerned. At the stroke of a pen, Japan's moral obligations were expunged and absolution given.

Throughout history, academicians, soldiers and historians, have attempted to represent cogent accounts of events relating to specified conflicts. In this endeavour, the world has been well served mainly because the material collated, was the result of laborious research directed to the investigation and analysis of fact gleaned from general evidence and sworn testimony. In some instances, and this book is but one example, the passage of years provides a foundation of unhurried authenticity that, in some instances, reveals a somewhat different picture of events and circumstances than the public at large may have generally believed.

One has also to be mindful of omissions – ever a fallibility when books are rushed into print following the heat of battle. Beliefs can be more enduring than actual events, and continue to persist until enlightenment and extra knowledge is forthcoming. Until this latter disposition is addressed, erroneous misconceptions will continue. One such belief is that the Second World War was less catastrophic than the First. The opposite is true. The Second World War lasted a good deal longer than the First, and was waged with a fanatical ferocity – as far as the Japanese were concerned and with a ruthless determination by Germany as well, and over a much larger area of the world's surface. Death-dealing weapons of an advanced design also played their part in the toll of war casualties.

The Second World War engaged the fervour and vigour of millions of people and, at the end, was responsible for a larger number of casualties. Well over 55,000,000 perished as a consequence of this second conflict – a figure which includes numerous Japanese massacres in Korea and China of captive civilians – as against, 8,636,700 lives lost between 1914 and 1918.

In the Second World War, the Passchendaeles, Sommes and Flanders were contested in like manner and fought on the Eastern Front at Kiev and Leningrad. The First World War's Dogger Bank and Jutland were exemplified in the naval actions at Truk, the Coral Sea and Midway, and once the monolithic forces of Japan and the United States, Russia and Germany, clashed in conflict, the rest of the adversarial nations though still fighting valiantly, assumed a lesser role.

From the beginning to end, the Second World War lasted almost six years. More civilians died than military personnel. Fifty-six nations took part in the most violent and protracted conflict of arms of which history has record. Destruction of cities and facilities was of a magnitude never before witnessed or envisaged. Barbarities and atrocities descended to the depths of depravity where humanity was displaced by fanaticism, compassion by hatred.

In the autumn of 1929 American financial houses tumbled in the infamous Wall Street crash. The repercussions were felt world wide. An economic collapse reverberated throughout America and spread like a cancer across the world gaining for itself the name, the Great Depression. German industry, supported by American credits, tottered into spiralling deflation and mass unemployment provided ideal conditions for the emergence of National Socialism and Communism. Conducive to Germany's growing economic collapse was the political instability racking the land and if these factors were not enough to destabilize the country, there was France across the border.

Despite noteworthy efforts by Austen Chamberlain, Briand, and Stresemann advocating reconciliation of ideals and objectives for a more harmonious Europe, there existed unfortunately, sufficient grievance and rancour within Germany for those of opposing views and beliefs to work solidly against such high ideals, fomenting instead the doctrines of fear and uncertainty, with Germany's economic collapse being more than helpful to their cause.

France for its part, distrusted Germany to the point that it continually blocked any attempts at reapproachment whilst not failing to notice the many instances of civil disorder plaguing its neighbour. Nationalist agitation in Germany, the dominant precursor to riotous street confrontation, did nothing to assuage French concerns, in fact, they served to bolster its opposition to advocated reconciliation, and vice versa.

Among the motley collection of political activists strutting beer halls and cellars in a near-prostrate Germany, an Austrian ex-corporal, destined eventually to be the most powerful dictator in history, began to harangue crowds with mesmeric forcefulness, promising a newer and greater Germany and astutely targeting International Zionism as the root cause and arch-conspirator for Germany's economic woes. His exhortations fell on fertile ground particularly when he ostracized the fact that inflation had grown so rampant that wheelbarrows were needed to take home a pile of almost worthless currency earned in daily labour.

Remarkably, within four years, on 30 January 1933, Germany had a new chancellor in the person of Adolf Hitler. The nations of Europe perceived the emergence of a new Germany and wondered, but not for long. Though crushed and insolvent and enduring severe internal disorder, the country was compelled into a fervour of patriotic nationalism where loyalty was rewarded and dissidents pilloried in a Germany now controlled by zealots who used and abused their new positions of power. It took two years to consolidate their grip on the

country's destiny before avowing their dedication to the most murderous racialism, the most incomprehensible and unjustified dogma, and the most outspoken expansionist agenda. This latter declaration of *lebensraum*, living space, was not seriously challenged at the time by Germany's neighbours.

The reality of self-preservation by the leaders of adjoining European countries failed to find appropriate expression, either by deeds or words other than to adopt a wait and see attitude. The transition from trusting indulgence and peaceful coexistence to a Cold War stance, took some time to adjust to. The fervent hope as always, was that Chancellor Adolf Hitler would remain contained by the limitations imposed by the Treaty of Versailles supported with the knowledge that overwhelming military power was available to back it.

In Great Britain, its elected leaders rested comfortable in the assurance of naked power bestowed upon the victors of 1918. It was a mentality akin to David and Goliath where Great Britain, Goliath, had no real qualms for the future – such concern was to come later. It was felt that the nations of the world knew that international tensions were, in the main, attributable to misunderstandings. Germany was going through difficult times and its transition to a more stable government was, expectedly, fraught with some excesses of nationalist fervour. With patience and goodwill and with causes of conflict resolved, Adolf Hitler's outburst could be viewed as political verbosity only. Besides, he did not have the military means to fulfil his ambitions.

There was a scarcely-concealed acquiescence in Great Britain to, and support for, Hitler's constant protestation of goodwill. It was a dictum generated by hopeful ideals along with a quiet belief in Hitler's avowal that Germany would stand as a bulwark against Bolshevism. Such was the receptive mood of British leaders to this declaration that the internal affairs of Germany were, for a time, conveniently overlooked. Equally important, and following the new-found military capacity of France, visionary concerns, historically sustained, of French ambitions to the dominance of Europe, remained an unsettling consideration.

Two years passed during which Hitler consolidated his influence and power within Germany. He withdrew his country from the League of Nations, dispatched a murder squad across his southern border to assassinate the Austrian Chancellor and, early in 1935, arrogantly declared that Germany was defying the prohibitions of Versailles and was actively reconstituting its air force and would be raising an army of 300,000 men by implementing conscription.

At this juncture Great Britain, France and Italy sent representatives to Stresa to discuss Hitler's defiance and the threat inherent. Italy as a partner to the talks,

was viewed with reservation and doubt. Benito Mussolini who had established his Fascist dictatorship in 1925, and though still technically an ally, was poles apart in so far as political philosophy was concerned. Italy was considered a most tenuous partner in the concept of restraining Germany's aspirations and, if the history of the next five years reveals uncertainty and indecision, it is mainly because of patient endeavours to persuade the Italian Jackal to cut his links with the German Fuhrer and the partnership, that not withstanding, finally ended in the Pact of Steel.

Meanwhile, another dubious Great War Ally, Japan, was establishing its own *lebensraum* and sphere of influence in north-east Asia, not by verbosity or threat, but with bloody and brutal conquest. It mattered not to Japan's leaders to heed the call made by the British Foreign Secretary Sir Samuel Hoare, on 11 September 1935, denouncing unprovoked aggression. Member States of the League of Nations were urged to follow a policy of 'steady and collective resistance to all acts of unprovoked aggression'. But then, and like Germany, Japan had withdrawn from the League of Nations, primarily for the reason that with its militaristic ambitions, it was inconceivable to live at peace with its neighbours. Its expansionist agenda forbade it.

Ironically, the militaristic expansionist policy of Japan in the twentieth century was not born of latent ambition according to Japanese scholars. From the foundation of the Empire of Japan, 600 years BC, two cherished principles of conduct prevailed. These were the doctrines of 'Hakko Ichiu' and 'Kodo'. The former implied the goal of making the world part of the Empire. The second meant that the first could only be achieved through loyalty to the Emperor.

These two laudable doctrines, innocuous as they seemed, were in more recent times exploited and advanced as a platform for personal and national aggrandizement by those who most urged, in Japan, policies of territorial expansion. Those who advocated military aggression as being Japan's destiny, turned it into a policy of moral nationalism by invoking the concepts of Hakko Ichiu and Kodo to the world's growing dismay.

One of the major war criminals to stand trial before the Tokyo Tribunal at war's end was Dr Okawa who, in 1924, published a book on the very same subject. His contention was, misguidedly, that as Japan had been the first state in existence it was its divine destiny to rule the world. The Biblical Kingdoms of Greece, Egypt and Rome, had no place in his thesis. Following the publication of his book he advanced this dogma - particularly to the youth of the

land at every opportunity, constantly lecturing students at Japanese military and staff academies on the principles of patriotic fervour, along with the spirit of national identity.

Much more will be revealed about Japan's expansionist policies as this book progresses but, because the course of history became so interwoven in so far as Germany and Japan were concerned, it is necessary to preface the succeeding chapters with the benefit of hindsight and to address some important concerns that have a parallel to the origins of the First and Second World Wars.

A figure from the past, though somewhat aloof from worldly concerns, had this to say when giving an audience to the German Ambassador to the Holy See, 'We live in uneasy times. I pray God that the world may be spared the horrors of another European conflict.' The speaker was his Holiness Pope Pius XIII, the date, 14 November 1938. Regrettably, Adolf Hitler, ten months later, plunged Europe into war. The counsel of reason being thrust aside in his pursuit of megalomaniac power.

Visionaries have throughout the centuries echoed the perils of national complacency, ignorance and intolerance. But seemingly, nations continue to pay scant heed particularly with regard to the growing incidence of civil wars. Equally and unaccountably, politicians and the news media persist in describing some specific conflicts as ethnic, whereas and according to the interpretation of most reputable dictionaries, they should be called more appropriately, something else.

A good example would be the former Yugoslavia. Ethnically, it is basically one nation, culturally, racially and with a common language. What divides it is religion. Northern Ireland is its ambiguous counterpart where indiscriminate killings motivated by politics, but fuelled by religious persuasions, set Protestant against Catholic. In Yugoslavia – Bosnia, Serbia and Croatia, the civil war properly identified, is Christian against Moslem and vice versa. The correct word for both conflicts is sectarian – not ethnic. Only in countries where riots make world news such as Germany, Great Britain and the United States, is the word ethnic – usually racial, correct. None the less, such conflicts, sectarian or ethnic, can reverberate around the world.

Just recently, French President Francois Mitterrand, had this to say to European Community leaders. 'Ethnic conflicts, ever a danger, could spark a European war at the start of the twenty-first century.' In a sombre warning at an EC summit in Brussels which was described as grave but constructive he went on to say, 'We are confronted by ethnic massacres which could turn into

regional wars.' Mitterrand said existing or potential ethnic conflicts that arose anew after the fall of Communism in eastern Europe could all degenerate into wars of attrition and to maintain stability in Europe, serious consideration had to be given to the problems of national minorities where open conflict had not yet broken out.

Conversely, and only three weeks previous, an endorsed member of the British National Front, won a significant local-body by-election in the UK, on a platform of England for Englishmen and with the advocacy that coloured immigrants be offered repatriation, along with their British-born children, to their ethnic homelands. The new councillor was specifically referring to immigrants of African or Pakistani descent who he alleged, would eventually precipitate, by their increasing numbers, a backlash of resentment that could culminate in racial conflict.

That he was elected on such a platform, clearly expressed the growing intolerance of public opinion towards the policy of open-door immigration, particularly where race and culture were so visibly different. To exacerbate and compound this enigma, the election results, when declared, precipitated a violent reaction from opponents who, in their anger, rioted in the streets. Unfortunately, many Pakistanis and Negroes clashed with supporters of the successful candidate. This was termed a provocation by the National Front which they described as an assault on the democratic process that strengthened the call for repatriation of coloured immigrants before the situation, in years to come, got totally out of hand.

It is timely at this point to transfer attention to Germany, where such ignorance, causes and effects, have been vigorously confronted. 'The Third Reich is as remote to the younger generation as the Middle Ages', said Bodo Franzmann of the Reading Foundation based in Bonn. He was referring to a pilot study involving 600 school pupils in Germany. 'Much of the racist violence we see today can be traced to ignorance and suppression of truth,' he added.

Supporting these comments, Chancellor Helmut Kohl believes children must be told in no uncertain terms and no matter how unpalatable to the national conscience, that the Nazis were a disgrace to Germany. 'This involves explaining the historical facts, of which they are startlingly ignorant,' he said recently.

'We feel something has to be done,' said Tilman Ernst of the Federal Centre for Political Education, commenting upon the release of information to school pupils. 'We have to make it clear,' he said, 'that a majority of voters supported

Hitler, of whom many agreed with the concepts of the "Final Solution" in so far as the extermination of Jews was concerned.' An initial survey of children and German youth revealed an appalling ignorance of the excesses and tyranny imposed by a militarist oriented dictatorship that prevailed during the era of the Third Reich.

Herman Koch an historian comments, 'The truth must be told honestly. Suppression or censorship of historical fact is not beneficial to the Nation in the long-term. A minority faction of self-serving interests may well profit by the muzzlement of horrific deeds, indeed, the emergence of neo-Nazism – clearly supported by youthful followers has, as its foundation, the proclaimed glories of a once powerful, ordered and patriotic Fatherland where ethnic cleansing guaranteed opportunities for the rightful Aryan populace.' He goes on to say, 'Germany must face up to its history squarely. So long as past glories are paraded and the violence of the Third Reich era deliberately suppressed, the Nation faces a troubled future particularly with regard to the additional problems of unemployment and economic recession. In this climate of uncertainty, bitterness and resentment are easily fuelled, creating a catalyst where the emergence of a new Fuhrer cannot be discounted.'

On a former visit to Europe I managed to include Germany in my itinerary to see first-hand, the development and progress of a country that was ravaged by war under Hitler's demoniac rule some fifty years ago. As chance would have it, my visit coincided with contained, but violent, demonstrations against Turkish immigrants in several cities. I detoured to one of these trouble-spots seeking information that could be useful as a compendium to the research undertaken for my book *The Allied Japanese Conspiracy*.

Fluency in German was not important. Dialogue was established in the English language assisted by vigorous waving of clenched fists for emphasis by my willing informants. Subsequently, by invitation, I accompanied the four young men to the home of one of them. Mindful that I was a tourist in the country, I merely expressed polite surprise at what I was shown. Before my startled gaze various items of Nazi paraphernalia including a photo of a stern faced Hitler were produced. Clearly, the young men, three of whom were unemployed, resented the presence of large numbers of immigrant workers who were not only displacing German workers, but were establishing conclaves of permanent residency and, most unacceptable of all, were building mosques.

I could only presume that the young men felt disenfranchised – through being unemployed. They perceived their national identity as being at risk and

through the vicissitudes of politics, felt that their career prospects were of penultimate consideration so far as Bonn was concerned.

Historian Herman Koch was correct in his comments and analysis of Germany's political pendulum as indeed were those of Chancellor Helmut Kohl and Tilman Ernst. In this age of free expression, it behoves researchers not only to tell the facts, but to write the truth fearlessly, not only narrating the past, but also informing about the present. Human nature can be as perverse and unpredictable now, as it was fifty years ago.

Before moving on it is important to declare this caution. To many, the Second World War is a distant memory, to some, virtually unknown. However, and despite the existence of the United Nations, the world remains troubled. Parts of Africa, Iraq, Haiti, the former Soviet Union and Palestine, have engaged world attention because of political quarrelling and shots fired in anger. Of equal importance are the racial and religious intolerance that spasmodically erupt in countries around the world. It does seem that where immigration of alien cultures is encouraged – Northern Ireland and Yugoslavia excepted, such division, exacerbated by ignorance and other considerations, provide the catalyst for race riots.

India, Ruanda, the United States, Great Britain and parts of the former Soviet Union endure this malaise of racial intolerance within their borders: breaking out like erupting volcanoes and setting neighbour against neighbour. Perhaps it could be said that the worst race riots periodically occur in the United States, with Great Britain coming a distant second and Germany third. This conclusion should not be confused with religious fratricide as is occurring in the former Yugoslavia – Christians against Moslems, or for that matter, Protestants against Catholics in Northern Ireland.

Politics and greed, or race and creed, appear to be the precursors for much of the world's ills. Perhaps it could be said that the race issue, once a dormant factor, was abruptly heralded to world attention via the gas chambers of Belsen. Seemingly, mankind has learned little from these excesses. Race riots, particularly in the late twentieth century, are no longer a phenomenon. As populations expand in multi-racial countries, so will the riotous disturbances. Integration by legislation is seen more as a palliative than a remedy. Bias and prejudice born of ignorance, will by compulsion, give way to the laws of the land protecting minorities but, so long as attitudes continue to remain prejudiced, such legislation obscured by the realities of personal dogma and surreptitious resistance, will remain forever a paper tiger.

I cannot stress too strongly the word ignorance. We are all human beings no matter the colour of our skin. It is heartening to realize that the German authorities are now, 1994, doing so much to educate the country's youth on the catastrophic events of its past. Were that Japan's leaders so like minded and visionary. Where governments confront their past and are honest about their history, be it good or bad, there is hope that succeeding generations will avoid rather than emulate the misdeeds of their forebears. Truth suppressed is ignorance personified upon which propaganda thrives.

Before leaving Germany I took copious notes of opinions freely expressed. In the process I gained the distinct feeling that had Hitler been around he would have had more than a few followers. Clearly, the large numbers of foreign workers in Germany was the major concern, this coupled with the fact – an admission too important to overlook, that many of them had brought their entire families to settle and colonize. The fact that a good number of these immigrants were Moslems was also a contentious and dividing issue.

One disgruntled German, barely out of his teens and patently proud of his Aryan heritage, didn't mince words. He, like other disillusioned Germans, particularly those from the former East Germany, was conversant with events since the tumbling of the Berlin Wall, and seemed knowledgeable if not somewhat misinformed about other countries' affairs. Though admitting that he was not particularly religious he none the less pointed to the civil war in Yugoslavia as an example of Christendom fighting for survival against the spread of Islam. Alien gods had no place in a Christian Europe he avowed.

A middle-aged German, an official in a local public facility, vented his ire on the presence of half-caste Negro children and adults – a legacy of the American occupation. He declared, that a country with such a polymorphous background of ethnic division – Whites versus Blacks and Asians versus Blacks, would never truly become one Nation. 'America,' he went on to say, 'has yet to experience its Second Civil War.' Fuelling this contention was his misguided belief that American Negroes had a hidden agenda involving a massive breeding programme that would stretch American welfarism to its limits. Such coarse and totally inaccurate predictions could perhaps be attributed to his early upbringing, I do not know, but what followed was a prejudice of the first magnitude.

'American Negroes were criminally-minded,' he said, 'and made up a large proportion of inmates in State and Federal Penitentiaries. One had only to see American news films and read newspapers for corroboration,' he added. Such

statements, albeit supported by kindred dissidents within the United States, do nothing for racial harmony. Fear and hatred is needlessly aroused and is the undoubted ignition to violence and intolerance – the life-blood of any reactionary group.

Not a week passes without some mention of discredited political activism in one part of Germany or another. The following was reported by 'Reuters from Potsdam', on 20 December 1993.

Nazi thugs stormed through leftist youth clubs in East Germany late on Sunday, waving swastikas and brandishing baseball bats. The police arrested three attackers. In the town of Wustrau, 30 to 40 neo-Nazi youths barged into a club waving prohibited Nazi banners and swastikas. They damaged furniture and fled when police arrived. Police did not say whether the incidents were linked.

With this 'Press Report' it is not difficult to understand the link between active instances of unrest and the recounting of such verbal expression. What follows is symptomatic of lingering Nazi prejudices – that could just as secretly be cherished in Japan, where censorship of history is approved.

'Wherever the Jews established themselves', the middle-aged German declared, 'their prime goal was to capture then control a country's industry and its wealth. Few Western countries,' he pointed out, 'were free of Jewish dynasties who control the largest corporations and the greatest accumulation of wealth. Adolf Hitler viewed the Jews as an economic threat to the German nation and took appropriate measures.' Not content with this vitriolism he went on to lambast African nations.

'They got self-government and independence,' he averred, 'but ever since, their countries have gone backward and without European economic aid, most would collapse.'

Dr Josef Goebbels, the Third Reich's Propaganda Minister, was a master in arousing passion and prejudice. It was he who proved the power of the written and spoken word by adroitly injecting venom to his diatribes as required. He has gone, thankfully, but not his hate. It is out there. It exists.

In these modern times and for a nation to survive, propaganda from the outrageous to the innocuous, must be confronted; not with forceful suppression but rather, with simple truth be it favourable or otherwise. As Germany's leaders sweep away the veils of silence concerning that country's war of aggression, so too must Japan's. An honesty of purpose is more helpful and enlightening than

editorial censorship. The Press, too, though the leader in free expression, does sometimes revert to self-imposed censorship for a variety of unsustainable reasons. Political considerations or whatever, are of no consequence in reporting real-life events. Happenings, viewpoints and opinions, no matter from what source, help us to understand the world we live in. There should be no disguising of fact. To be careless of the truth is to be careless of the consequences. Two World Wars should have taught us that.

That the Second World War was *the* most horrific contest of arms, particularly when taken in context with the number of civilian casualties, is recorded fact. This book attempts to address a number of imponderables that have subsequently emerged since the cessation of hostilities in 1945, and examines the progress of one of these nations in particular. But first it has to be said that as far as Germany is concerned, numerous prosecutions for war-crimes against German nationals were instigated and rigorously pursued by its new democratic government. Wherever cause was found and atrocities proved, justice was done to the satisfaction of the world in general.

Without fear or favour, the German Authorities prosecuted war criminals – often as not with the aid of Jewish witnesses. A noteworthy diligence was displayed in unearthing previously unknown war crimes and exposing their perpetrators. West Germany's honesty in this regard helped alleviate bitterness and resentment towards the country in general and was conducive to formulating good relations with previous adversaries.

We come now to Japan. But first, reference should be made to a number of publications that were produced about the Second World War following the end of the global conflict. Even during the period of the War Crimes Tribunals, sufficient was known to pre-empt their findings and supply books to an insatiable public demand. Publications produced after the Tribunals ceased to function were of greater substance and authenticity and have, during the intervening years, provided information of considerable accuracy. However, with the passage of time, not unexpectedly, more material – mostly involving Japan and its armed forces – has come to light. It does not make pleasant reading and raises more questions than answers.

Unlike Germany, Japan was less than forthcoming about atrocities committed. After its surrender to the Allies, problems of language, alphabet and culture – a most trying and alien factor, along with a reluctance to tell the truth, helped assist the Japanese wilfully to conceal atrocities and violation of human rights that the Tribunals had no inkling of. Pursuing this wall of silence and

following its return to self-government, the Japanese, unlike the Germans, did not and have not, prosecuted any war criminals since self-rule was restored. **Barren** indeed was Japan's contrition for war crimes, or so it would seem. **Sorrow** if any, the more likely hypothesis on balance of probability, stemming from a regret that it had lost the war, nothing more.

Despite the inscrutability and perversity of known Japanese war criminals, the magnitude and scope of their bestial acts was not confined to them alone. So numerous were the atrocities, scattered and carried out in every area of occupation, that more than a few escaped attention and retribution. It has to be remembered that prior to entering the Second World War, Japan's militarists, their hands already stained with blood, had been waging a vicious war in **Manchukuko**, Korea and China for a number of years. Their troops were battle-hardened and arrogant with victory. Scores of thousands of victims died as Japanese hordes pillaged, ravaged and raped their way throughout north-east Asia – Korea and China suffering incredibly.

Untold thousands of Koreans were impressed into the Japanese armed forces as conscripted labourers and for other menial tasks. This agenda allowed for the release of more soldiers to fight on the battle-fronts or to garrison occupied territory. Thousands of defenceless civilians died for no other reason than an insatiable blood-lust by their conquerors. To this day, many of these executioners, some of whom had to be known to the post-war Japanese Authorities, remain unpunished and appear likely forever to be protected from prosecution until death removes this obligation.

It has taken close to half a century for post-war Japanese governments to admit, reluctantly after years of denial, that its wartime troops waged war on women with terror campaigns. Previous denials, not really believed by the world, have, with the weight of overwhelming evidence, compelled the Japanese nation to admit an appalling travesty of justice for which it largely escaped censure by the War Crimes Tribunals in the late 1940s. It was in 1993 that the sordid story of millions of rapes against helpless women and girls was brought to public attention. As far as the Knights of Bushido – alias the Sons of Heaven were concerned – there was no code of ethics. Morality was displaced by depravity, an accepted aberration in the Imperial Japanese Army, as facts in this book will later prove – even to the sadistic and wanton beheadings of victims without just cause.

It is difficult to comprehend acts of ruthless barbarity and mindless executions without some insight into the Japanese mentality. The war that Japan waged

was as unprovoked as it was aggressive and expansionist. The widespread conflict and bloodshed was started by the Japanese, thus denying them any element of justification. What must be remembered is, that from the turn of the century, Japan's leaders were war-minded, attacking with impunity such targets as a unit of the Imperial Russian Fleet peacefully at anchor on the approaches to Port Arthur. This unwarranted and surprise attack in 1904, was eminently successful and, best of all, did not invite retaliation. Thus emboldened, Japan's destiny for the next forty-one years, with a seemingly inexhaustible supply of manpower, was to be one of aggression, invasion and conquest that accounted for hundreds of thousands of lives. It took two nuclear bombs to put an end to Japanese expansion – militarily at least.

It is conservatively estimated that the Japanese Armed Forces, between 1904 and 1945, were responsible for close to fourteen million deaths, their own casualties included. There were two classifications of victims. Those who died defending their respective countries and those who perished under subsequent occupation or capture. The Japanese proved themselves a pitiless enemy.

Substantiated fact is the bare truth, not fiction. I have encountered some difficulty in separating fact from fiction, but only because of the nature of atrocities discovered – so bizarre and appalling, almost unreal, have they been. Months of research spanning a period of ninety years and dating back to 1904, have gone into this book. Indeed, a litany of suffering, deprivation, hate, genocide, madness and death, attends many a narrative. Sadly, the millions of nameless victims who perished at the hands of the Sons of Heaven, were sacrificed on the altars of war with mindless efficiency and, more to the point, needlessly.

Upon completion of this work, I laid down my pen with a sigh of thankfulness. No one, myself included, could help but be moved as events and endless tragedies unfolded. I have searched in vain for modicums of humanity and compassion among the many instances of wartime horror but, inevitably, found none. As a last resort and not without some trepidation, I attempted to psychologize the mentality of such a fearsome foe. Alas, even this assessment eluded me other than to conclude that, the Japanese themselves welcomed death, conditioned as they were, in the belief that their Emperor was a God. To die for him or for causes pursued in his name was an honour above any other earthly consideration.

King George VI and his consort, Queen Elizabeth, presided over a different sort of Empire, but where the loyalty of their subjects was no less devoted.

However, this allegiance, duly acknowledged by the British Royal Family, did not include acts of murderous aggression in their name, nor would they have consented. Conversely, Emperor Hirohito, so revered and honoured by his subjects, could have, and indeed should have, intervened in the early years of his reign when Japan was running riot during the 1930s across north-east Asia. Only when Japan appeared to be losing the war did he bestir himself to use his Imperial Authority to influence the decision of Japan's leaders to face up to defeat. Prior to the growing and incessant bombing of Japanese cities he remained a deliberately mystical figure, though well aware of the suffering and devastation executed in his name by the Armed Forces of his country. That Hirohito was not tried as a war criminal, remains an enigma of history.

One cannot help but speculate on political expediency. Again, there was the implied threat of mass suicides by the populace if in any way, the sanctity of the throne was disturbed. The divine Emperor was saved from the ignominy of trial, not because of his innocence, but out of consideration for the fact that his millions of subjects would not have so meekly submitted to Allied occupation if he was ranged alongside General Tojo in the dock.

Power politics, ever the tool of statesmen, played an important part, among other considerations, in guaranteeing the continuing role of Hirohito as Emperor. Khrushchev, after relinquishing his post as Secretary of the Soviet Communist Party and in his writings declared, 'Comrade Stalin was remiss in not insisting that the Throne of Japan be abolished. It symbolized the decadence of Ancestral Power and a monarchy supportive of Imperial ambition in whose name, disgraceful acts of war were countenanced.' Fortunately for Hirohito, President Harry Truman thought otherwise.

Throughout history, in earlier contests of arms, a standard of conduct was observed by warring factions, particularly from the seventeenth century onwards. There was a gallantry and lack of vindictiveness despite, in the heat of battle, a dogged and determined resolution of combatants to triumph over each other. Soldiering, as the world once knew it, observed the humanities, especially in defeat.

GENERAL HIDEKI TOJO

Whatever may be said or has been said about General Hideki Tojo, one fact of history cannot be denied. He was a fervent supporter of the Imperial Institution, particularly in his latter days and when on trial for his life. Time and time again, when explaining the necessary conduct of the war, first as War Minister and then as Prime Minister, he never missed an opportunity to exonerate the Emperor from all culpability. Reviewing Tojo's defence evidence, and bearing in mind that he knew he was a doomed man, one cannot help but notice, reading between the lines, his constant absolving of Emperor Hirohito of any wrong-doing, but more about that later.

The indictment against Tojo, as emphasized and pursued by the prosecutors of the War Crimes Tribunal at Tokyo in 1946, was that he had committed crimes against humanity, crimes against peace, and other reprehensible war crimes. Behind the formal accusations was the basic contention, ill-defined in legal terminology, that Tojo was the personification of the militarists who had unduly influenced the Government of Japan and who had led the Japanese into a massive war planned with treachery and monumental deceit and conducted with a savagery and ferocity, the like of which the world had never before seen. He was, to apply some of the disparagement used, a fanatical militarist with an insensate hatred of non-Japanese, a bloodthirsty samurai who typified the ferocities and fanaticism of his race, and implicit in this derogatory caricature, were the heinous charges levelled against him.

Supporting this analogy, was the knowledge that of all the oriental races, the Japanese were the most racially conscious by virtue of the fact that they believed their origins were pure in strain and divinely descended, thus sustaining the belief of their ethnological superiority. The first rebuff to this myth was the unpalatable decision of the United States Congress in the 1920s to include Japanese in anti-immigration laws passed to prevent the continuing flow of Chinese labourers into the United States. Enraged protests and demonstrations

erupted in Japan over this measure and caused the Japanese government to add its displeasure. What really offended the Japanese was not so much that they were denied entry to the United States, but that they were lumped in with Koreans and Chinese as undesirable immigrants. In their eyes, the continental Asians were inferior in every way to themselves and it was an insult to be considered no better than Chinese or Korean coolies.

It was about this time Tojo returned to Japan after a tour of duty in Manchuria. From his perspective he viewed the new United States immigration laws as provocative and insensitive to Japan's need for more living space. Its population was large and was expanding by at least one million a year. Here then was a grievance, nurtured over the succeeding years, coupled with the resentment of being identified as no better than the Chinese racially.

Thus, having served the army diligently for a long period, Tojo, now a major general commanding the Kempetai in Manchuria, was, without any complicity on his part, thrust into a role which indirectly opened doors that would eventually elevate him to the highest post in government. The catalyst for Tojo's swift emergence into prominence was precipitated by a revolt of angry army officers in Tokyo on 26 February 1936.

Companies of soldiers led by these officers, none higher in rank than captain, unexpectedly set out in a resolute bid to take over the Government. They were all members of the 1st Infantry Regiment that was on notice for posting overseas. In a merciless sequence of killings, the mutineers hunted down their victims just before dawn. With cold deliberation, these murder squads went into action. Servants, civilians, guards and policemen and anyone else who tried to interfere, were ruthlessly killed. The Lord Privy Seal Viscount Saito, and Finance Minister Takahashi, along with Colonel Watanabe, the Inspector General of Military Training, were individually assassinated. At the same time the official residence of the Prime Minister was stormed and, mistakenly, the brother of Admiral Okada the Premier was murdered.

Still lusting for blood, the mutineers continued their rampage with next on their assassination list Count Makino, a former Privy Seal, and even the respected person of Prince Saionji, the last surviving member of the 'genro council' – the elder statesmen who advised the Emperor on matters of State. Members of Count Makino's household staff and a police guard gave their lives to enable the Count to make his escape. Forewarned and escorted by police, the 80-year-old Prince was conveyed to safety minutes before the mutineers arrived at his villa in the suburb of Okitsu. Not so lucky, Admiral Suzuki, the

Grand Chamberlain, was seriously wounded and, although presumed dead by his attackers, eventually recovered.

In the pre-dawn light, the mutineers occupied the Prime Minister's residence, the law courts, the war ministry, the parliamentary diet building, newspaper offices, the police headquarters, and army and navy headquarters. Then, establishing armed camps around the Imperial Palace and declaring themselves the 'Loyalist Army', their leaders sent messages urging other troops to join them. They issued a proclamation calling for the abolition of parliamentary government, while denouncing elder statesmen, politicians and big business. 'These', they declared, 'were responsible for the ills besetting Japan and for holding back its destiny. Such men had misled the Emperor and they, the soldiers, were doing their duty to His Majesty by taking direct action to rid him of these 'insincere advisers'.'

In confident expectation that their generals would join them and assume control of the *putsch*, the junior officers set up their headquarters at Tokyo's downtown Sanno Hotel, from which guests, including a dozen foreigners, were swiftly but politely ejected. With the hotel cleared of guests, the mutineers waited nervously and in a highly charged atmosphere, hoping that their anarchy would be rewarded with the fruits of success. Though they waited in vain.

If generals or admirals had thoughts of joining them, they quickly decided otherwise. Emperor Hirohito, confronted with visible insurrection and the paralysis of government, and with cabinet ministers sheltering behind the barbed wire and a double-row of obedient troops protecting the Imperial Palace, used his Imperial Authority. Summoning his minister of war, he decreed that the self-styled loyalists were rebels and must be crushed. With authority so absolute, Hirohito's decree was instantly obeyed.

Troops were rushed into the city from other garrisons and naval landing parties from warships in Tokyo Bay took up positions, sealing off rebel-occupied zones. Senior officers went to the barricades manned by the mutineers, arguing, exhorting and urging them to surrender. At the end of three days, the revolt of the 1st Infantry Regiment was all but over providing that one proviso was observed. It was agreed that the rebel leaders should have the privilege of the defeated samurai of ritual *hara-kiri*, and eighteen swords and coffins were solemnly supplied to them for the purpose.

When the rebellion collapsed on 29 February, two of the ringleaders had claimed their ancient right of suicide. The rest of the rebel officers, disillusioned at the lack of support, submitted to arrest convinced that, though the revolt had failed, their patriotism and sincerity might well have struck a chord of

understanding both emotionally and politically, if not with the government, then at least with army and navy leaders: they were, after all, significantly influential and could resolve the 'unfortunate incident' amicably with the surviving members of the cabinet. but the rebels' hopes were not to be realized. Emperor Hirohito saw to that.

Their courts-martial when they convened, were held in secret and details censored to both press and radio. Thirteen of the rebel leaders were sentenced to death. Eighteen other officers received long terms of imprisonment. Twenty more officers were cashiered while a number of senior NCOs also received stiff prison terms. Thus ended a revolt that they had no hope of winning once the Emperor had expressed his displeasure.

The benign benevolence of the Emperor of Japan, so often paraphrased by his apologists and defenders, had none the less a deadly sting. When it came to the crunch, Hirohito was not only listened to, he was obeyed. Therefore, is it not more than probable that behind the cloistered walls of the palace, the influence of Hirohito was just as divine in other matters?

True, it was avowed by his close confidants and persons of influence, that Hirohito was essentially a man of peace, but we only have their word for that. What is known, however, is that on most other matters of State, these self-same people employed ambiguity and deceit to mislead the world. Would it not, therefore, be reasonable to suspect a conspiracy to protect the Emperor at all costs? And those who pleaded Hirohito's benevolent virtues the loudest, had the most blood on their hands, and in all other war-mongering activities, the least credibility.

Meanwhile in Manchuria, incredulity and confusion was rife as reports of the army uprising in Tokyo filtered through. The civilians, naturally, hoped that as a consequence the Kwantung Army might very well be recalled to Japan - a forlorn hope as it transpired. Among the army leaders in charge of various occupation forces in Manchuria and China, there must have been a lot of indecision as a result of messages received from the rebels in Tokyo, urging their support and inviting their participation in the mutiny. Not least to receive such a message was General Itagaki, Chief-of-Staff of the Kwantung Army. With his own history of past scheming and plotting to make the army the supreme power and authority in Japan, it was hoped that he would place his forces on the side of the rebels. Such powerful support would more than likely have persuaded other senior officers to declare themselves, thereby ensuring a successful revolt and an army take-over of the functions of government.

Unsure of himself, and knowing the consequences if the Emperor intervened, Itagaki faced a dilemma. Then, there was the commander of a well-disciplined internal security force (the Kempetai) to be considered. Which way would he respond? but most decisive of all, was his reluctance to get involved in anything so desperate as a violent attempt by 'junior officers' to overthrow the Government. At the same time, whatever his own feelings were, Itagaki could not ignore the crisis in Tokyo. Proclaiming a state of emergency, he ordered Tojo, the chief of the Kempetai to take appropriate measures to maintain order.

In response, Tojo's reaction was exemplary. Working from files and dossiers held in the Kempetai headquarters, and supported by information gained through interrogation of suspects and police spies and by the interception of mail, his military police swooped. Within a few hours all civilians and soldiers likely to support the rebels in Tokyo were taken into custody. Following such swift action, a crisis which would have been as dangerous nationally as locally was averted. Hideki Tojo discharged General Itagaki's order in a most resolute way – even before news of the Emperor's displeasure at the revolt had reached Manchuria.

The Army High Command, dismayed and surprised by the boldness of the mutiny, and the deaths of prominent figures as a consequence, lost no time in rewarding Tojo's loyalty. At the beginning of 1937, Hideki Tojo was gazetted to the rank of lieutenant-general and succeeded Itagaki as Chief-of-Staff of the Kwantung Army.

Having introduced Tojo and established his high army appointment, attention is now turned to 17 October 1941, when he was appointed Prime Minister by Emperor Hirohito. In America, Tojo was viewed as a 'typical officer of the Kwantung Army clique', a 'Manchurian expansionist with militarist ideals, stubborn, aggressive, and neither prone to sentimentality or negotiation'. The British tabloids made much play of his nickname 'Razor', one of them even going so far as to suggest that he was a 'son of Satan preparing to unleash all hell on the Far East'. (Never a truer prophecy was printed.)

Not unexpectedly, Adolf Hitler endorsed Tojo's appointment along with Benito Mussolini while the Nazi press hailed Tojo as 'a man charged with energy, thinking clearly and with a single purpose . . .' Meanwhile in Japan, both the press and radio stepped up their rabid propaganda, denouncing British oppression and exploitation of Asians wherever the Union Jack flew and stridently condemning American prejudice and lynching of Negroes. Such

rancour was not helpful to maintaining good relations abroad, but then, neither was it intended.

Propaganda covered every spectrum of activity in Japan including the indoctrination in ultra-nationalist principles of all school children throughout the nation. To the purist, the curricula that were followed appeared more as mythical teaching and brain-washing than anything else. The fairy-tales of Japan from its divine creation by the Sun Goddess two thousand years before were taught as historical fact. Then too, respect for the Emperor was totally implanted to the ends of nationalism and the myth of his divine descent impressed into awed young minds.

Before each day's teaching was started, a ceremonial dedication, accompanied by dutiful bows, was made before the Emperor's portrait by all pupils and teachers assembled. And though the ancient Shinto worship was the official State religion, Hakkō ichiu, the divine command of the God-Ancestors that the eight corners of the world must be united by Japan 'under one roof', was also inculcated as a creed of resolution. Further, and to instill embryonic military fervour, pupils armed with miniature rifles, were drilled and trained in obedience by regular or retired army and navy NCOs.

It should be recalled that there was one period in the early 1920s when the world in general, but particularly the United States, was held in high esteem by Japan. It is worth mentioning if only to extemporize the transient vicissitudes of gratitude. At midday on 1 September 1923, the first tremors of an earthquake, and what was to be the most catastrophic disaster in Japanese history, shook the country: the tremors were a prelude to six days and nights of stark terror and colossal destruction in which over 100,000 Japanese lost their lives and the cities of Yokohama and Tokyo were reduced to near ruins.

The sheer magnitude of this calamity and its tragic toll, compelled world-wide sympathy and offers of assistance in varied forms.

Generous to a fault, the Government and people of the United States rallied to a stricken Japan. The prompt and bountiful aid from the American people and government far exceeded the aid from other countries. The Japanese army, too, did all in its power to assist the plight of the civilian population – a much more commendable task than rigorous military training or putting down riots.

The goodwill towards America lasted a little more than a year but ended abruptly with the passage through the United States Congress of the Selective Immigration Act. This discriminatory measure effectively put the brakes on Asian emigration to America and included the Japanese along with Chinese and

Koreans. Tojo, commenting on the Act at the time had this to say. 'It shows how the strong will always put their own interest first. Japan, too, has to be strong to survive in the world.' The 'race issue' as many Japanese called it, was viewed as just that. The fact that America had the right to enforce its own immigration laws for other compelling reasons was disregarded. These reasons were. That Asian immigration, if left unchecked, could overwhelm the existing population. That emigrants were unskilled and came from a totally different cultural background and, that the economy and standard of living would decline in parenthesis. (These were not unreasonable considerations.)

Japan, like the rest of Asia, was heavily populated, and it had been hoped that its surplus could emigrate to the continent of North America, thus the Selective Immigration Act was a rebuff to such aspirations. The British Dominions of Australia and New Zealand were also known to be against Asian immigration, with Australia in particular, declaring a 'White Australia Policy'. At the time, Tojo knew of the restrictions but was prepared to wait. If the fates gave him an opportunity – and they did – then he would take Australia and New Zealand by conquest and embark on their colonization by Japanese immigration. Both countries were sparsely populated and had space for millions more. Such a move would also relieve the burden of over-population in Japan and its growing food shortages.

Hideki Tojo's ambitions nurtured over the years, were suddenly made feasible upon his appointment as Prime Minister. Backed by the army and intent upon expanding Japan's war of aggression he was now in a position of absolute power and at the pinnacle of his career. Fifty-one days from the date of his appointment, south-east Asia and the Pacific were plunged into war.

THE PROPAGANDA WAR: DECEIT AND TREACHERY

With the advent of wireless, communications became swift and of tactical importance, not least being its use as a persuasive force in the war of words. William Joyce, known as Lord Haw Haw, regularly broadcast propaganda from Germany denigrating the British war effort and its Jewish profiteers while lauding the invincibility of the Third Reich's Armed Forces. He was a publicly identified traitor of British birth who had thrown in his lot with the Nazis.

However, the arch-propagandist of the times, was Reich Minister Joseph Goebbels. Known behind his back, even in Germany, as the poisonous dwarf, Goebbels devoted his time to misleading the German nation and eulogizing the fictitious virtues of his beloved Fuhrer, Adolf Hitler. The written word equally, had a powerful effect and was in many ways more influencing and prolonged, with the added benefit that it could be read, distributed and re-read. Examples of deliberate mis-information and deceit are too numerous to list, therefore it will be sufficient to mention the following.

Horst Seemann, a Nazi journalist, specialized in writing vitriolic and racist slanted propaganda directed primarily at Negroes and Jews. It was direct and unashamedly offensive, but it achieved the objective of being accepted as the truth. Instance the following. 'England always loved to play the part of the champion of "Liberty and Humanity". So she started this war, brought about by herself, in the name of "Freedom and Progress". She broke into the Anglo-Saxon crusade hymn, "Onward Christian Soldiers", and under this motto she sent intoxicated Negro pilots over the defenceless civil population of the Continent, but before starting on a terror flight, they received the benediction of a chief Rabbi and were offered premiums by Jewish societies for the destruction of churches and cathedrals. For organizing their terror raids,

Churchill and Roosevelt availed themselves of the service to act as advisers of Jewish emigrants whose planning consisted of preparing, far from the theatre of war, suggestions and instructions for the air crews of murder bombers. Thus, in May 1943, the former Reuters correspondent in Berlin, Bettany, revealed that the bombing of German valley dams was the result of a brain-wave of a Jewish specialist.'

The invective directed at the Jewish race by the Nazi journalist is obvious. He goes on to say, 'The actual background of these flights of destruction and murder, dictated by Old Testament-like hate, is to be found in the Jewish saturation of England and America.' The newspaper (*Neue Zuercher Zeitung*, 28 September 1942) rightfully ridiculed British Foreign Secretary Anthony Eden, when he declared that 'the bombing was only meant to cripple the Germans and take away from them the possibility of causing further harm'. 'Such unctuous, conceited, plutocratic justification, has been repeatedly echoed by the English weekly, *Calvacade*.' Horst Seeman concluded.

Such racist propaganda was outrageous and without foundation, but the bigger the lie, the more believable it became. In war, there were no holds barred, and by lampooning or accusing selected ethnic groups, they could be made to appear as a threat to the Aryan race and its culture. The Jews were cast as furtive money-grubbing race defilers, and the Negroes as a sub-human specie. The youth of the land were vulnerable to these platforms of hate to the point at Hitler Youth meetings, of being reminded that it was the Jews who had demanded the crucifixion of Christ. Even to the Nazis, the Bible was sometimes useful.

German propaganda was blatant and vociferous long before the outbreak of the Second World War. Both Hitler and Goebbels didn't mince words when it came to justifying the goals of the Third Reich, indeed, throughout the 1930s and while Europe bemusedly dithered, Germany's Fuhrer made full use of mass rallies and nation-wide broadcasts to declare his policies. Political observers considered some of Hitler's ravings as brash, arrogant and unobtainable – the condition of the Treaty of Versailles clearly stood in his way, but at least he had declared them.

Meanwhile in Japan, propaganda by verbosity was, in the main, avoided. Its preparations for a wider war remained a close secret so far as the Allied Powers and a neutral North America were concerned. Its ambitions rested in south-east Asia and the Pacific along with the hope that the protracted war in China would speedily end in total victory. Already, Japan had joined the Axis, but as a

non-belligerent, by signing a Tripartite Alliance on 17 September 1940. Helping Japan's military ambitions was the distraction of the European conflict. Germany's successes held world attention, and though the China conflict remained unresolved, it didn't prevent Japanese strategists from planning a surprise attack on Pearl Harbour that would shock the world.

The training for the attack on Pearl Harbour, and the practice assaults on occupied areas along the coast of China in preparation for the combined operations in Malaya, had by now been completed. In September 1941, the final 'War Planning' was evaluated and agreed with at the Naval War College in Tokyo. Despite this secrecy and stealth, the Government of the United States, still a neutral country, was beginning to watch the Land of the Rising Sun with justifiable concern – completely unaware that its naval base at Hawaii was targeted for attack and destruction without a formal Declaration of War.

The Tripartite Alliance deserves more than passing mention, if only to identify its real intent. In an Imperial rescript it was hailed as 'an instrument of peace' which would enable each nation 'to have its proper place in the world'. But the Lord Keeper of the Privy Seal understood its full significance, for he told Emperor Hirohito that if it was concluded, a supreme effort would have to be made to end the war in China, because sooner or later Japan would have to reckon with the United States and Great Britain, and would not be able to avoid hostilities with the Netherlands, France and all the countries of the British Empire. The Lord Keeper had astutely discerned the Pact's real intent.

Although there was no mention in the Tripartite Pact itself that it was directed against the Soviet Union, the Japanese Army had no doubt of it when the Alliance was concluded. The Foreign Minister himself left its intentions in no doubt. Addressing a meeting of the Japanese Privy Council Investigative Committee, just prior to the pact being signed, he stated, 'Although there exists a non-aggression treaty, Japan will aid Germany in the event of a Russo-German war.'

By 1941, the international situation had changed considerably and Germany and Italy were virtually Japan's only friends. Therefore, when a Neutrality Pact was offered by the Soviets, Japan willingly agreed and it was concluded on 13 April 1941, just two months before Hitler's invasion of the USSR on 22 June 1941. In signing this Pact Japan acted with great perfidy, because there could have been no doubt of Germany's impending invasion of the Soviet Union. The Japanese Ambassador in Berlin had been advised a bare two months before by von Ribbentrop that fresh divisions had been formed during the winter of

1940-41, for the specific purpose of invading the USSR and ending the Soviet Communist Regime.

This deviousness and duplicity by the Japanese was a device of conduct that attended many of its diplomatic activities, by stating one intention or objective, but meaning entirely the opposite. However, Japan's crowning act of duplicity and treachery was yet to come. Although Japan was urged by Hitler to attack Vladivostok and enter the war against the USSR, it held back, not because of its Neutrality Pact with the Soviets, but because of strategic military considerations that had been finalized by the War Cabinet in Tokyo. However, other military assistance was put in place. By concentrating a large army in Manchuria, and proceeding with other 'noticeable' military preparations, many Soviet divisions on Russia's eastern borders, which would otherwise have been thrown into the battles now furiously raging in the western USSR, were kept back and pinned down just in case of a Japanese attack.

Japan also supplied Germany with military intelligence regarding the strength and disposition of Soviet forces along their eastern borders, and interfered arrogantly with Soviet shipping. Russian ships at anchor off Hong Kong were shelled while others were sunk by Japanese aircraft, and many more illegally seized by the Japanese Navy and taken to Japanese ports where they were unreasonably detained for deliberately long periods. Such was the perfidy of the Japanese in so far as their Neutrality Pact with the Soviet Union was concerned. It was because of these perfidious and deceitful acts that an embittered and furious Stalin exacted a terrible revenge at war's end, by enslaving hundreds of thousands of captured Japanese soldiers.

Inevitably, the United States became more than concerned; it was troubled by the warlike activities of the Japanese and, by the beginning of 1941, warnings were sounded in America. 'Never before,' President Roosevelt told Congress, 'has American security been so gravely threatened.' It was at this stage that the Japanese Government decided on a strategy of diplomatic intransigence and deceit following the arrival in Washington of Ambassador Nomura in February 1941.

Nomura's first official duties were to make the President and the Secretary of State Cordell Hull understand 'that Japan had been forced to sign the Tripartite Alliance because of American and British interference with the establishment of the Co-Prosperity Sphere, organized to uplift national aspirations of neighbouring Asian countries, and that it would be better if the United States would stop interfering with Japan's aims in east Asia and, instead, co-operate

with her in return for an opportunity to participate in the benefits which would thereby accrue.'

By this time Japan had decided to launch an attack on Singapore in order to deprive the United States of friendly bases in the Pacific in the event that the US entered the European war. Preparations for this projection were expected to be completed by May 1941. The one great obstacle thwarting the Singapore option and the conquest of the greater Pacific area, was the United States Pacific Fleet based on Hawaii. It was this concern that had compelled the Japanese Government to instigate feasibility studies in Tokyo for the neutralizing of this potentially dangerous naval force.

In due course, a plan was prepared and submitted to the Commanding Admiral of the Japanese Combined Fleets for the destruction of the American Fleet within the confines of Pearl Harbour. It was proposed that a surprise air attack should be made by a special task force and that it should be carried out on a day – preferably a Sunday, when, with Christian church services and weekend leave absences, the Naval Base would be at its most vulnerable. To further guarantee surprise and total destruction, it was recommended that the attack occur 'while the United States and Japan were still at peace'. Supporting this dastardly proposal was the synopsis that were the attack successful, Japan could be assured that it would be able to sweep down through the Pacific and occupy all its objectives including specific strong-points that it could establish in the Indian Ocean before the United States could recover from the blow to mount a reprisal.

Notwithstanding, the Japanese Ambassador was interviewed by Cordell Hull in Washington on March 1941, to exchange opinions of mutual concern. The Secretary of State was completely unaware of Japan's perfidious intentions. At these talks Ambassador Nomura said that it was inconceivable that their two countries could become involved in hostilities which would be disastrous for both of them. While agreeing, the Secretary of State questioned, as it appeared that Germany, Italy and Japan were preparing to conquer the rest of the world, how the United States could be expected to sit back and accept the situation with indifference?

Later in the same month, Matsuoka, the Japanese Ambassador to Berlin, met the American Ambassador in Moscow and assured him emphatically that in 'no circumstances' would Japan attack Singapore or any American, Dutch or British possession as his country had no territorial ambitions. Returning to Berlin, Matsuoka told Hitler of his conversations in Moscow with the United States

Ambassador and explained that his denials of the Japanese government's real intentions were to mislead the British and Americans until the day when Japan would surprise attack Singapore. Deceit was clearly, Japan's stock-in-trade.

As weeks slipped by, Japan continued its preparation for a Pacific war while protesting its peaceful intentions. Never had the United States encountered a country of such deceit. It was obliged, without evidence, to accept Japanese lies as truths and to believe in the integrity of the Government of Japan. Thus, on May 28 1941, further talks between Ambassador Nomura and Cordell Hull resumed. Barely had they got under way before Chungking was bombed by more than 100 Japanese aircraft causing considerable destruction of American property. The Secretary of State expressed the displeasure of the United States Government and discontinued the talks, which would not be resumed before an assurance was received that the Government of Japan intended to pursue a course of peace.

Cordell Hull was a wise statesman and had infinite patience, but his continuing faith in the integrity of the Japanese government was to no avail. The Japanese Navy was already training for the approved attack on Pearl Harbour. Aircraft carriers shielded by destroyers and cruisers, were exercising on the eastern fringes of the Sea of Japan. Hundreds of aircraft were employed in practising landing and take-off from the carriers in Japanese territorial waters and out of sight of agents from enemy countries. Practice dive-bombing was carried out as well as refuelling at sea, and the practice launching of shallow-water torpedoes was being brought down to a very fine art.

During June, July, and August, constant diplomatic discussions continued between the United States and Japan, but the minimum Japanese demands were such – perversely obstructive that negotiations towards possible agreements could not have been expected to succeed. Nor indeed were the talks intended to reach satisfactory conclusions. The diplomatic charade by the Japanese – and that's what it was, provided a useful means to lull the United States into a false sense of security while Japan continued to prepare for war. The training for the attack on Pearl Harbour had reached a high state of perfection and readiness. In late September 1941, a review of the pending attack was held at the Naval War College in Tokyo. High ranking officers of both the services worked out the details of the aircraft assault on Pearl Harbour and drew up a plan of operations for the occupation of Hong Kong, Malaya, Singapore, Burma, the Netherlands East Indies, the Philippines, Borneo, Central Pacific Islands, New Guinea, the Solomon Islands and, in brackets, the

possibility of Fiji, New Caledonia and a foothold on the North Island of New Zealand.

No logistic or detail escaped attention, even a senior official of the Foreign Office was summoned to provide information on the number of Japanese spies located throughout the territories destined for occupation. A highly confidential folio on their individual reports was also supplied. Not only was the Japanese Consulate-General in Hawaii a nest of spies, there were many thousands of Japanese-Americans living in Hawaii and on the American mainland, of whom a few loyal Japanese, the official assured, 'could be depended upon to provide valuable information'.

As an aside, a considerable furore arose within the United States following the bombing of Pearl Harbour. President Roosevelt didn't need to be persuaded that the Japanese Carrier Fleet wouldn't have approached Hawaii 'blind'. He knew that the Japanese-Americans *en masse*, would not have been spying for their homeland, but it would have been reckless to assume that every single American-Japanese was innocent. Still shocked by the fury and destruction caused by such a well organized air raid, and aware of Japanese fanaticism but without the foresight of knowing what might happen next, the President ordered, in the interests of national security, the internment of all Japanese living within the Territories of the United States.

Certain it is the Secretary of State Cordell Hull, would have acquainted the President of Japanese prevarication, deceit, duplicity, deviousness and falsity. Thus informed, the President would have had little option but to heed the cautions of his advisers which would have been 'the real possibility of espionage even if by only a few'. Then there were fuel storage depots, bridges, tunnels, hydro-electric dams: the list was too awesome to contemplate. Roosevelt could not disregard such advice. The Japanese had attacked the United States in a most cowardly way and forced a war that would inevitably claim many casualties. Trust had been replaced by anger and distrust. Thus internment under humane conditions was ordered which, by comparison, was not all that bad. Towards the end of this book reference will be made to the release of the interned Japanese and the efforts made by the US government in their rehabilitation.

Returning to the war preparations being made by Japan. Munitions production was accelerated, conscription for the Armed Forces was stepped up, a revised plan for the mobilization of Japanese workers was implemented, more forced labour by Korean workers, and the transport of more of them from

Korea was authorized. The Cabinet Printing Office expanded the production of large quantities of occupation currency notes in guilders, pesos and dollars for use in the Netherlands East Indies, Malaya and the Philippines, such was the confidence of a nation that was referred to by those with most to fear, as 'the yellow peril'.

The final decision and the date for the outbreak of hostilities was irrevocable so far as Tokyo was concerned. Everything to ensure the annihilation of the American Pacific Fleet at Pearl Harbour was in place. The fact that the onslaught, when it occurred, would be launched on a Christian day of rest, added an extra certainty of maximum devastation coupled with the element of demoralizing surprise. Thus, the certainty of a crippling blow was assured. All that remained to be done was to continue the diplomatic charade in Washington up to the very last minute of 7 December, by using the ploys of procrastination, prevarication and chicanery. It was felt that the Americans would not see through Japan's evasiveness until too late. In this regard, the Government of Japan had shrewdly and correctly guessed America's naivety.

Any divisions within the Japanese Cabinet, no matter how slight, were disposed of with the resignation of Prince Konoye as leader of the Cabinet. He was succeeded in the office of Prime Minister by Tojo – now a full general on 18 October 1941, and allowed to remain on the active list as well as being leader of the Government. With General Tojo in overall charge, administering the responsibilities of Prime Minister, Minister of Munitions and Minister of War, all political opposition – such as it was, to the militarists desire for war were removed.

By 1 November 1941, the final evasive diplomatic negotiations with the United States were about to begin. Two alternative proposals were put together, known separately as 'A' and 'B'. Proposal 'A' was to be presented to the Secretary of State first, and Proposal 'B' was to be negotiated alternatively if no agreement could be concluded on Proposal 'A'. The underlying concerns of both these Proposals were as fictitious as they were irrelevant in that neither of them had substance or credibility. But then, it was never intended that they would be acceptable to the Government of the United States. The real determinant being, that the Proposals would be useful in 'playing for time'.

Predictably, Proposal 'A' was rejected by the American Government, and as instructed, Ambassador Nomura presented Proposal 'B' to Cordell Hull on 20 November 1941. It met with the same fate as Proposal 'A' and was rejected, being replaced by a counter-proposal from the Secretary of State. This was

handed to the Japanese Ambassador and Special Envoy Kuruu and listed the following proposal.

- (a) That there should be a non-aggression pact among all nations with interests in the Far East.
- (b) That Japan should withdraw her armed forces from China and French Indo-China.
- (c) That Japan should withdraw all support from her puppet Government in China.

That same day, the Japanese Fleet destined to attack Pearl Harbour set sail, while the Japanese diplomats were instructed by their Foreign Minister Togo 'to refrain from giving the impression to Cordell Hull that the negotiations had gone as far as they could'. 'Tell the Secretary of State,' Togo urged in his cable, 'that you are awaiting further instructions from your Government.' It was essential for diplomatic exchanges between the two countries to continue because, under cover of them and before news of their discontinuance became known to the Dutch, British and Americans, surprise attacks could be made on the targets selected. Reprehensible perfidy though this instruction was, it mattered not and could be equated with the same objectives of attacking peaceful lands without warning by surprise and stealth. The age of Japanese duplicity had arrived.

In the meantime, Kuruu and Nomura remained in Washington scheming plausible excuses in the words of their instructions, 'to prevent the United States from becoming unduly suspicious'. At 10.00 am Tokyo time, on 7 December (International Date-Line), Togo's final instructions to his two Envoys breaking off negotiations were cabled with the additional advice 'that the exact hour for its delivery to the American State Department would be advised later'. Clearly, the hour of death and destruction was at hand and the Envoys, particularly Kuruu, knew it.

In a desperate hope to preserve peace President Roosevelt cabled a personal message to Emperor Hirohito. It was received by the Japanese Foreign Office but was not delivered to the United States Embassy until 9.00 pm Tokyo time. Swiftly decoding the President's cable, Ambassador Grew hurried to the Japanese Foreign Ministry at 12.15 am on 8 December Japanese calendar date, and asked for a personal interview with the Emperor.

Skilled in the art of treachery and deception and a master of political and

diplomatic chicanery, the Foreign Minister replied that he himself 'would hand the President's message to His Majesty'. Thus assured and half an hour after midnight, Ambassador Grew returned to the American Embassy. In the United States it was then 10.30 am, December 7, 1941. The Pacific war had already commenced.

A DAY OF INFAMY

On 7 December, just before dawn, with the moon occasionally hidden by clouds, a Japanese task force was in position north-west of the Hawaiian Islands. Aircraft carriers rolled gently in a slight swell as accompanying warships screened and checked the waters around them. At 0600 hours and as dawn broke, the battle flag of the Rising Sun was hoisted while a mass of planes revved up on the carriers decks waiting for the order to fly off. Then abruptly, the order was flashed. Officers and men burst into shouts of 'Banzai' as the first plane heading the attack and piloted by Commander Fuchida, lifted off the flight deck. The exultant 'Banzai' shouts were almost overwhelmed by pulsing throbbing roars as other planes took to the air, quickly slipping into formation and disappearing south-east.

While these aircraft were flying towards the tranquil Hawaiian islands, an air defence alert should have been sounded at military and naval bases the moment a manned radar station sited on top of a steep hill near Hickham airfield began monitoring the approach of a staggering number of aircraft. Yet strangely, this electronic but reliable surveillance was not treated with the serious attention it deserved. Taking the kindest view and as an excuse for a 'general alert' not being raised, was the prior knowledge that a flight of long-range aircraft flying from the United States mainland, was due to reach Hawaii by 7.15 am. Because the arrival of a number of American aircraft was expected, there was a reason to partly understand the confusion of the technicians and their lack of concern but, the United States was north-east – the clusters of blips on the radar-screen were north-west, a compass differential too substantial to ignore, yet, ignored it was.

Another circumstance that should have had Hawaii on full alert was the fact that America was forewarned. It was in early May 1941, that Mrs Nancy Verkuil and her husband Captain Verkuil, Chief of the Netherlands East Indies Army Code Service, broke an important Japanese code, which in October, revealed

Japan's 'four winds code' with the result that on 5 December in Bandung, Java, the Japanese sentence 'Higashi No Kaze Ame' (East Wind Rain) was intercepted. This was the Japanese 'GO' signal for an attack on Pearl Harbour within 72 hours. The Chief Intelligence Officer, United States Army, otherwise identified as Chief Military Attaché, and based at Batavia in Java, responded swiftly to the information supplied by the Netherlands East Indies Army Code Service. He relayed the warning to Washington DC in the United States Naval code. Then, twice more in the United States Army code.

That these warning messages were received by the appropriate authorities in the United States is confirmed by the receipt of acknowledgements which were verified by Captain Safford and General Wedemyer in their respective reports. Without a shadow of doubt, Washington was forewarned of the imminence of an attack on Pearl Harbour.

One wonders, was it an incredible case of bungling? Or was the omission of failing to take proper notice, a consequence of sheer disbelief or, peace-time ineptitude? It would be a safe assumption to observe that Secretary of State Cordell Hull would not have persevered so patiently with the Japanese, had he thought that such treachery was possible. A qualified consensus believes that the Government of the United States was informed but failed to address credence to the reports while Japanese diplomats were talking peace in Washington.

Meanwhile, and flying high, the first wave of Japanese aircraft arrived over the pendant shaped island of Oahu revealing itself between breaks in the clouds. Maintaining steady formations, the planes rapidly drew nearer until, far below, and reflecting the rays of the early morning sun, the pilots saw below them in the waters of Pearl Harbour, the United States Pacific Fleet at anchor. It was much more than a tempting target – it was a doomed one. Commander Fuchida was moved to observe that it was 'calm and peaceful' and later wrote in his log 'amazing to see so many unsuspecting and almost perfect targets that the warships presented'.

There was scant activity on the American warships. The Pacific base was just awakening to a quiet and peaceful Sabbath with some members of ships' crews ashore attending early morning church services, while others were on weekend leave. Those still on board were about to have breakfast or were just relaxing while others were preparing for the customary morning raising of the Stars and Stripes when waves of Japanese aircraft attacked from out of the sun. The assault that followed was a complete surprise and was pressed home with deadly efficiency.

So determined were the Japanese to lay waste to Pearl Harbour and its environs – the prolonged attack lasted two and a half hours – that the last plane didn't leave until 9.30 am. Three destroyers, two cruisers, five battleships and two other naval vessels were sunk. As well, four other destroyers and one cruiser were seriously damaged. In all, 175 planes were destroyed on the ground at Hickham airfield. Hangars and workshops were obliterated and 2,500 men died sudden and violent deaths – over 1,000 of them officers and men on the battleship, Arizona.

The Japanese lost twenty-eight planes which failed to return. Reporting to Admiral Yamamoto, the pilots were all agreed that the United States Pacific fleet had been completely eliminated in one devastating blow. But, exultation turned to swift dismay, when it was learned, following a quick de-briefing, that the American aircraft carriers had escaped destruction. Unaccountably, all of them, contrary to information supplied by Japanese spies in Hawaii, had sailed from Pearl Harbour with their whereabouts unknown.

With the dastardly attack accomplished and the United States now certain to be on a full war alert, the threat from the American aircraft carriers was suddenly very real. No longer having the element of surprise, the Japanese task force turned and steered for home. Attacking unsuspecting targets was one thing, but faced with vengeful retaliation by aircraft from American carriers was quite another. Thus, the Japanese Fleet returned to Japan and the adulation of the nation for its glorious and devastating attack against America.

Not so carried away was American Secretary of State Cordell Hull. When Ambassadors Nomura and Kuruu presented themselves on that cold and sombre Washington afternoon at the State Department to hand over the Japanese Government's final note, they were rebuffed with a glacial contempt. Their note was a repetition, with only a slight variation, of the one handed to Cordell Hull previously which was a long recital of Japan's 'sincere' efforts in China, of American bad faith, and accusations that the leaders of the United States had plotted to extend the European war to the Far East, etc, etc.

Restraining his anger Cordell Hull told them. 'In all my fifty years of public service, I have never seen a document more crowded with infamous falsehoods and distortions. So huge were the fabrications, I never could have imagined that any government on the planet was capable of uttering them.' Then, without allowing them to reply, he motioned them from the room.

Later, the Secretary of State was moved to say, 'Never did I dream of such treachery. This day will do down in history as one of infamy.'

Not only was America staggered and shaken, so too were the British and Netherlands Empires. The invasion of south-east Asia and the rapid advance of Japanese forces into the South Pacific was nothing short of astonishing. But then it should be remembered that Japan, through diplomatic duplicity and other misleading acts of deviousness, had prepared itself well for its war of conquest. Never had a nation so immortalized itself in the art of cunning and treachery, and it was because of such monumental deception that Pearl Harbour was attacked in such a cowardly way.

As previously stated, it is not possible, nor is it intended, to follow Japan's war of aggression every step of the way. To do so would hinder the objective of analysis and examination of salient factors that, up to the present day, have been ignored. But, like a court of criminal appeal, the necessity of verifying a nation's guilt and establishing its responsibility demands that atrocities against humanity, where alleged, have the appropriate evidence available for adjudication.

It is with this dedication and responsibility that atrocities be carefully enumerated, not so much in line with the progress of Japan's aggression, but rather as selected examples of horror performed in every area of conflict; and not as a sequence of events but chosen randomly as examples of bestiality that cost the lives of so many innocent victims. This chronicle of twentieth century warfare, though necessarily condensed, speaks not only for those who died under despicable torture, malnutrition, bayoneting and beheading; but also for the living survivors of unimaginable brutality whose ordeal did not end in a peace treaty and absolution for the aggressor nation. Human lives and particularly human minds, forever scarred, were subtly altered by incarceration and violence. For many victims the war did not end when the guns ceased firing.

Following Japan's remarkable sweep southward, the world watched and wondered as seemingly invincible Japanese troops, overran everything before them. Great Britain fell into a sombre mood when it was learned that two of its best battleships, HMS *Repulse* and the *Prince of Wales* had been sunk, but worse was to come. The fortress island of Singapore, defended by over eighty thousand men, and supported by huge naval guns that pointed out to sea, was attacked, not by an armada of Japanese warships, but by banzai-shouting troops who advanced against its poorly defended coastline opposite the mainland of Malaya with only the narrow Straits of Johore acting as a tenuous buffer. Inevitably, with constant air raids taking their toll, along with an extreme water shortage, Singapore capitulated.

Winston Churchill, addressing a hushed House of Commons, solemnly announced, 'Under the shadow of a heavy and far-reaching defeat, I have the onerous duty of informing honourable member that Singapore has fallen.' After supplying details he added, 'Tonight the Japanese are triumphant.'

In an entirely different mood in the land of the rising Sun and speaking to Diet members of the Japanese Parliament, Tojo told the wildly cheering representatives of a further military success for Japanese troops. Then, after leading a jubilant assembly of excited members in three exultant shouts of 'Banzai' he declared that, 'with the capture of Singapore, all important bases for the encroachment of Britain and America in south-east Asia, were in the hands of Japan.' Concluding his dramatic announcement, Tojo announced that, 'The following day would be proclaimed "Singapore Victory Day".'

In a following statement to the newspaper *Kokumin*, Tojo warned Australia and New Zealand to accept the inevitable. No reliance, he said, could be placed on the British or Americans for protection. The future happiness of their peoples, he added warningly, depended entirely on whether their governments understood Japan's 'real intentions'. In the same arrogant vein, Tojo announced that Japan would henceforth be known as 'Dai Nippon' – Great Land of the rising Sun. With Singapore – renamed 'Shonan – Light of the South', the other conquered territories having European names were to have the stigma of their colonial past removed by being given suitable Japanese names. So intense was Tojo's hatred of Europeans and anything connected with their culture, more particularly British, he also ordered the removal of English words, of which there were more than a thousand, from the Japanese language.

Not unexpectedly, the Netherlands East Indies was next on Tojo's list for conquest. Though poorly prepared for the might of Japan's hordes, the Netherlands colonial administrators set about unflinchingly to resist the armed forces of Japan with every means at their disposal. Indeed, naval and air force units of the Netherlands East Indies, had already fought alongside the British in defence of Malaya, though it wasn't until the end of January that Japan declared war on Holland. This meant automatically, the Netherlands East Indies.

In response, the Netherlands colonial governor reciprocated the war declaration and proclaimed the Territory's determination to fight Japanese aggression – which was swift in coming. Landings had already been made by Japanese troops in British and Netherlands Borneo, when, on 27 February, Admiral Doorman of the Royal Netherlands Navy who was appointed to command an Allied fleet comprising American, Australian, British and Netherlands warships

to defend the main East Indies islands, sighted a large Japanese task force escorting nearly 100 troopships. Though a number of warships under his command were considerably damaged through previous encounters with the Japanese, and though outnumbered and with less effective fire-power, Doorman none the less ordered his fleet to engage the enemy.

The following naval battle which must go down in nautical annals as one of sheer courage against overwhelming odds, was fought over a period of two and a half days. Between engaging superior Japanese warships, substantial damage was inflicted on the enemy troopships – at least fifteen were set on fire or sunk, but the majority of them managed to steer to safety while overhead, a Japanese spotter plane circled over the Allied Fleet continuously, observing for the Japanese gunners and torpedo-men without a single Allied fighter aircraft available to shoot it down. Eventually, about the middle of the third day of naval action, Admiral Doorman's desperate fight ended with the destruction of his fleet. With the coasts now unprotected, more Japanese troops were landed and swiftly overran the lightly defended East Indies islands.

Though some oil installations were seriously damaged by retreating Netherlands forces, others were captured intact or with only slight damage by Japanese airborne troops. The use of paratroops to thwart the destruction of large reserves of oil was undoubtedly not expected by the defenders which presumably, the Japanese planners counted on. To the south, less than three hours flying time, was the vast northern coastline of Australia, mostly uninhabited, apart from Darwin and a few mission stations. It was a tempting prize that could not easily be defended and must surely have exercised Tojo's mind as triumphant reports reached him of the Netherlands East Indies surrender.

Once more, celebrations broke out all over Japan at the news that not only had the Netherlands East Indies succumbed to the invincible might of the Japanese armed forces, but that the Burmese capital, Rangoon, had been occupied. With the Pacific Islands falling easily into Japanese hands and parts of New Guinea occupied, Tojo had every reason to declare a second Victory Day on 12 March 1942. The euphoria sweeping Japan was intense as millions of civilians lauded Tojo's military genius while bowing dutifully towards the direction of the Emperor's palace.

Japan's leading newspapers exalted Tojo in allegories symbolizing his warrior status, giving him an almost mystical spirituality in flowery and extravagant phrase as victory after victory was reported in exultant prose. For a change, deception was absent from front page leaders. What was being reported was

the truth. What was being eulogized was fact. Japan had every reason to be proud of its invincible armed forces. That treachery and deceit had brought such reward would not have mattered even if the general public had known. Tojo would have been admired even more, for having outwitted the enemy.

Sheer numbers, substantial resources, and the most powerful fleet in the Pacific, this combination contributed to Japan's victories, and they were impressive. With many strategic Pacific islands occupied including New Britain, the Solomons, and a large part of New Guinea, Japanese forces had seized territory encompassed within a convoluted perimeter enclosing most of Burma, the Indian Andaman Islands, Malaya, Singapore, most of the Philippines, the Netherlands East Indies, all of Borneo, the important Gilbert and Marshall Islands, Hong Kong and Wake Island. Soon to be seized were some islands off the coast of Alaska in the Aleutian group.

These conquests had only to be impregnablely garrisoned before their natural resources became firmly available, making Japan resource rich and the most powerful country in Asia if not the Pacific. Knowing the only question facing Japan's leaders was, where to next? Australia perhaps, or less difficult, New Zealand? Australia was vast, New Zealand was small and, topographically, not unlike Japan. With such a small population, New Zealand could be invaded successfully with less than three army divisions, and in terms of soldiers, Japan not only had the best, but millions of them.

Despite the fact that most military files and plans of a strategic nature were destroyed by the Japanese following their surrender, it is known that the large army garrisoning Rabaul, totalling 100,000 men and equalling six divisions, had been intended to move south to New Caledonia, Norfolk Island, and then to New Zealand. With the bulk of these forces predisposed for the capture of both the North and South islands of this last country – almost virtually assured – Australia would have faced not only a threat from the north, but also from the east. Fortunately, the Battle of the Coral Sea which was fought almost entirely from aircraft carriers, altered these plans drastically.

Japan's war leaders must have cursed the ill-luck preventing them from destroying these carriers at Pearl Harbour. All three of them, the *Enterprise*, the *Lexington*, and one other, had been well out of reach at the time of the attack. These three carriers, joined soon after by the *Homet* and the *Wasp*, were now a force to be reckoned with and presented a formidable obstacle to further Japanese expansion. By his decision not to seek the carriers whereabouts and destroy them immediately after the attack on Pearl Harbour, Admiral Nagumo,

through being too cautious, gave the Americans a fighting chance to strike back and regain the initiative, despite its grievous losses in capital ships.

The Japanese Navy, with numerous cruisers, destroyers and battleships, along with eight carriers, initially controlled the Pacific in the first few months of the war, nothing it seemed, could stand in its way. But the Battle of the Coral Sea was the first encounter where Japanese expansion met with stiff and determined opposition that compelled a tactical withdrawal. With extended lines of communication and scores of South Pacific garrisons to supply and reinforce, the matter of logistics and the more determined resistance encountered, became a worrying concern to Admiral Yamamoto, particularly as Japanese troops drew closer to Australia.

Then there was the problem of Allied submarines – more especially the American. Though its surface fleet had been dealt a devastating blow, its submarine arm was inflicting punishing retaliation against Japanese shipping, particularly troop-transport. The need to allocate precious warships for their defence was an unwelcome necessity and contributed to the depletion of naval task forces in other areas.

Also, the original plan to land troops in Northern Australia did not and would not proceed until New Guinea was fully occupied. Then, there was the divided opinion over whether to attack New Zealand, a weaker nation, first. These considerations along with military and naval reverses that were to follow and viewed collectively, were the precursor to the limit of Japanese expansion. Yamamoto, even then, must have known that with American carriers on the prowl and other Allied warships combining in unified commands, the initiative was slipping from Japan. America could only get stronger and ultimately, with its 'hi-tech' industries and natural resources geared to war production, it was just a matter of time before Japan lost the war in the Pacific. Coincidentally, following the raid on Pearl Harbour, he had confided to Admiral Nagumo his fears that Japan would hold the ascendancy and initiative for only six months. The United States, he had warned, would then be a force to be reckoned with.

THE HORRORS OF CONQUEST

To those who suffered the insufferable and the agonies of captivity under the 'benevolence' of the Japanese invaders, this book pays tribute. So many acts of barbarity occurred, it is remarkable that the Japanese were forgiven – though certainly their cruel crimes will never be forgotten. Tens of thousands of prisoners of war were so subjected to the most depraved and bestial acts of terror that, weakened in body and spirit, they succumbed, finding in death release from deliberate starvation and torture.

Every nation observes an annual Remembrance Day or some such recognition of the calamity of war. There is Veterans Day, Hiroshima Day, Anzac Day and Armistice Day to name a few. Such occasions honour the victims and the fallen who died that we might remain free. This homage and esteem is commendable, but sadly, where governments are concerned, compensation to their families for the supreme sacrifice remains niggardly or disregarded altogether as events in these chronicles will prove.

Those war victims who survived, especially the prisoners of war, have looked in vain to their governments for justice. Alas, with peace restored, the qualities of compassion and gratitude quickly faded. It was the former enemy who received succour, not their victims. Is it any wonder that associations have banded together to appeal to the United Nations for lawful redress on concerns that their own governments will not validate in spite of the proved atrocities?

It should be remembered that the ordinary Japanese soldiers were as cruel as their military police – the *Kempetai* – similar to the Nazi *Geheime Staatspolizei*. They were generally as callous and vicious and had earned a fearsome reputation, though not one earned by valour and chivalry, but rather by their delight in inflicting extraordinary and unusual punishments – simply if they felt like it or, imposing a reign of terror, the like of which the world had never before imagined. By comparison, the ordinary soldier serving in the German *Wehrmacht* and if assigned guard duties at allied Prison Camps in Germany, acted

first and foremost as a fellow human being. Of course he had a job to do, but he carried out his duties in a civilized manner and did not go around beheading his prisoners as he felt like it, or deliberately starving them to death. Undeniably, there was a vast difference between the conduct of German troops and Japanese troops in the field or as captors. 'Far better to be a prisoner of Jerry than of the Japs', was a phrase often heard – and with feeling.

It is necessary to provide a background to events, the circumstances and plight, of those unfortunate enough to be captured by the Japanese. So numerous are the atrocities and attendant injustices, that it would be futile to attempt to include them in this book. Therefore, only the worst deeds will be addressed.

Some examples of war-crimes, and that's what they were, listed in the following narratives, have never before been published or, if touched upon, have through lack of information, escaped the full attention of historians or, because of worse atrocities, received scant mention. Towards the end of this book, questions will be raised concerning the fair treatment of the Japanese by the Allied Powers (excluding the Soviet Union) at war's end as compared with the shoddy consideration given to the oppressed people of conquered lands. People who suffered terribly at the hands of the Japanese as did the prisoners of war. Justice demands no less.

The advance of the Japanese across the Pacific was truly phenomenal. No sooner had one objective been captured than, like locusts, swarms of Japanese troops would move on to their next area of conquest, bringing with them an exultant exuberance at their seeming invincibility and striking fear into the hearts of their next batch of prisoners. Had the conquering troops acted like normal soldiers, then the mood of the local inhabitants, depending upon individual attitudes or loyalties, would have amounted to no more than regret and resignation at suddenly finding themselves with new masters. But these were not normal soldiers, they were drunk with victory and new-found power – a dangerous combination.

Hong Kong, Malaya, the Philippines, Singapore, Borneo, the Netherlands East Indies, numerous Pacific Islands and parts of New Guinea, all of these objectives had either been overrun or were fighting desperate battles for survival. Where resistance was greatest to the Japanese aggressor, so to, when that resistance was overcome, was Japanese vengeance. Torture and death, indiscriminate shooting, vicious bayoneting, rapes, looting and most mind-searing of all, decapitations, were carried out. Numbed with shock and despairing for the future, local inhabitants became cowed and terrorized by Japanese excesses.

Prisoners of war, though indomitable in spirit, suffered brutality and a deliberate regime of starvation, being forced to work under a blazing tropic sun while untreated battle wounds turned septic or gangrenous, and malaria took its toll. No wonder the Sons of Heaven were cursed as the Sons of Hell.

During the grim months of 1942, along the New Guinea Kokoda Trail and at Guadalcanal, desperate actions took place to stem the tide of Japan's all-conquering advance. A significant factor encouraging Japanese successes was what seemed to be an inexhaustible supply of troops; wherever they landed they came in their thousands, swamping and overwhelming the defenders by sheer weight of numbers. Assisting the Japanese was the legacy of the surprise attack on Pearl Harbour, and the undeniable tactical advantage it bestowed. However, with their lines fully extended, and a resolute America now working up to full mobilization, it was necessary for the Japanese to consolidate their gains before targeting their next objectives – Australia and New Zealand.

Australian and New Zealand troops barely had sufficient time to garrison specified Pacific Islands before the Japanese arrived to seize them. New Guinea, a large land mass to the north of Australia, and with hundreds of miles of undefended coastline, was quickly infiltrated and garrisoned by the Japanese at strategic points with the aim of attacking Port Moresby via the Owen Stanley Range. The idea was to capture this important administrative port from the rear, rather than from the sea. On balance, this strategy held the most promise and, as quickly as troops could be assembled, a large force of them were sent into the jungle hinterland to pursue it.

But the Japanese general had not reckoned with or considered the calibre of Australian forces who would be encountered on the way. Already the 9th Australian Division had earned high regard in the desert, particularly on Montgomery's right flank at El Alamein. Just two months previously, the Field-Marshal commented that without this resolute division of fighting men, his task on that occasion would have been 'much more difficult'. It was the gallant men of this seasoned division who were assigned the task of preventing the Japanese from crossing the jungle-clad ranges and advancing on Port Moresby.

Jungle warfare was entirely different from fighting in open desert spaces. There was also, the skill of amphibious warfare to be learned as well as acquiring the skills of survival in a hostile jungle. Notwithstanding, confident of halting the aggression of the little yellow men, these veteran Australian troops fought with the same exemplary valour their forebears had shown at Gallipoli and proved themselves more than a match for the Japanese troops.

Without any doubt, it was the Australians who bore the brunt of the New Guinea campaign in its early and middle stages, achieving in the process, the successful defence of south-eastern New Guinea and Port Moresby. By the end of 1942, American troops were landed in New Guinea in preparation for a 1943 counter-offensive at about the same time as further Australian reinforcements arrived. But none of the Allied planners anticipated the ferocity of the Japanese resistance: it took more than a year for the Allied troops under General MacArthur's over-all command to recover the north-coast bases of Buna, Salamaua, and Lae – and of the remaining 13,000 Japanese troops in action at the end, only 38 were ever taken prisoner. Futile banzai charges had, in the main, taken care of the rest.

An example of Japanese tenacity and the different guile employed by them can be instanced in the following. On a number of occasions, and in seemingly safe areas of the jungle, a shot, or maybe several would disturb the stillness. Usually, one or more Australian soldiers, following in single file along a jungle track, would crumple to the ground. Their comrades alerted to the unexpected presence of the enemy, would dive for cover, their eyes searching the foliage, their ears straining to the sound and source of the shots. This was a very trying and mentally exhausting precaution, particularly if the sniper – and that's what he usually was, stopped firing. The fear ever present in the eyes of pinned-down troops was 'who would be next?' But of one thing they could be certain. The sniper or snipers, would be concealed and staring down from the top of one or more nearby trees.

A graphic example of a sniper's effectiveness is as follows. Towards dusk and as the daylight dimmed in the jungle, a sniper loosed off two quick shots. Two Australian soldiers were killed instantly. Alerted and diving for cover, comrades peered through the gloom at adjacent tree tops. Then, from further up the track, a single shot rang out. Another soldier died. Was the sniper fire a prelude to an ambush? The officer commanding the Company had to determine. And how many more snipers were there?

His men had been on the march all day and were worn out but, the lieutenant couldn't risk sending two patrols to locate and deal with the snipers in the increasing gloom; concealment in the half-light was so absolute that the men in the patrols would be picked off one by one. From their perches in the tree tops the snipers could detect any movement on the forest floor and thus remained a constant danger. As darkness closed over the jungle, moonlight cast fickle shadows amongst the dense foliage, creating conjured images where there

were none. By now the weary soldiers, pinned down and with every sense straining, had reached the point where they were seeing visions of Japanese snipers in every tree.

Only at the breaking of dawn did the impasse resolve itself, and that was totally due to nature. The lieutenant began to notice that birds were avoiding particular trees. Pressing binoculars to his eyes he inspected each tree minutely, but so cleverly camouflaged and so utterly still in posture were the snipers, that it was some minutes before they were located accurately. Swiftly, whispered orders were passed, gun barrels aimed, and at the word 'Now!' the jungle echoed to the sound of rifle and Bren gun fire. With leaves and branches shredded and scattered, the bodies of two Japanese soldiers were revealed. Both were sprawled limply, like rag dolls, their corpses secured to the tree trunks by lengths of vine. Isolated as these dead soldiers were from their retreating forces, it could only be presumed that they had volunteered or been ordered to give their lives for the Emperor. Such was the Japanese mentality.

The Japanese, either individually or in a group, were proving to be an inscrutable and unfathomable race. The enigma of Japanese power coupled with uncivilized behaviour was an imponderable juxtaposition, baffling to the sensibilities of the world's more civilized people. This observation is made because acts of wanton barbarism by Japanese forces were so disgraceful that one war correspondent was moved to write: 'The callous and inhuman massacre of hospital patients, along with their nurses and doctors, by Japanese soldiery, and accompanied by rape and mayhem, makes one wonder if the Emperor's hordes were not, in reality, obsessed with the mania to remove peoples heads and a lust for genocidal executions – an aberration more applicable to psychopaths.'

In layman's terms, the correspondent was suggesting that Japanese soldiers were 'psychotic killers' and though charges of genocide against the Japanese were never pursued, sufficient evidence, from collated massacres, suggests this probability. Two awful examples of hospital massacres – though there were many more, occurred while Japanese forces were storming triumphantly through south-east Asia and the Pacific. The first example happened in Singapore and was carried out in a most dreadful and horrifying way.

The Princess Alexandra hospital was situated not far from the causeway linking Singapore island to the Malaysian mainland. It lay directly in the path of the invading Japanese forces and was guarded by a detachment of loyal British-trained Gurkha troops. Arrogantly advancing into the hospital grounds with a large number of Japanese troops, the officer in command called upon

the Ghurka's to lay down their arms. In reply he was told that the building was not a military installation but a hospital. Thus rebuffed, and annoyed at the Ghurka's refusal to surrender their weapons, the officer ordered his troops to advance and kill the two dozen guards. This order was promptly carried out before the Japanese swarmed into the hospital.

For the next hour or so, the sick, the dying, the incapacitated, were butchered in their beds, numerous wards echoed to the cries of the patients as they were methodically slaughtered by clubbing, bayoneting, shooting, and if unfortunate enough to have fallen from their beds, beheading. Paradoxically, surviving sailors fortunately rescued from the battleships, HMS *Repulse* and HMS *Prince of Wales*, many of them already seriously wounded, were admitted to this hospital. It was now their misfortune to be caught sick and defenceless though no doubt they faced death bravely. Also massacred were doctors and nurses – the latter being raped first.

A similar atrocity occurred at the headquarters of the Filipino Red Cross in Manila. Situated in a large building at the junction of Isaac Peral and General Luna Streets, it was prominently marked with Red Cross signs. Early one evening armed Japanese troops stormed into the building. There were over seventy civilians inside including seven patients and five members of the permanent staff. The remaining sixty odd were local residents who had taken refuge there, trusting in the protection of the Geneva emblem; but they didn't know the blood lust of Japanese.

Other Japanese troops poured through a rear gate and began firing indiscriminately at women and children who were seated around a small playground. One woman luckier than the rest, picked up her child and ran screaming with terror into the building. Her screams turned to wails of anguish upon discovering that her 5-year-old girl had been shot through the head. Close behind and yelling coarsely, four Japanese marines and an officer entered the building while continuing to fire their weapons. The officer aimed his pistol at several frightened pre-school children and with cruel thoroughness, killed them all. One very small boy, terrified and frightened out of his wits, ran wildly about the room screaming his fear, but not for long, for he soon fell dead with a bullet in his head.

When the shooting momentarily ceased, the Japanese officer was informed by Miss Andaya through the Red Cross interpreter, that she was a Red Cross nurse, that he and his troops were in a Red Cross building, and was asked what it was he wanted. For an answer, the officer shot her in the chest. After

collapsing on the floor but before losing consciousness, she saw other troops enter the ground-floor ward and start shooting and bayoneting patients in their beds. This slaughter went on for nearly half an hour amidst gleeful shouts as one soldier or another, dragged terrified civilians from wash-rooms, cupboards, toilets, and from under beds. So bestial and sadistic was the orgy of bayoneting, that at the end of it, and with floors and bed linen covered in blood and gore, and bodies – many of them disembowelled, sprawled everywhere – the scene of carnage resembled an abattoir. It should be added that no one was spared and that included the medical staff and nurses.

Nothing in Manila was sacred, and to complete the horror of the day even the Roman Catholic cathedral was entered by Japanese troops who dragged young girls from the shielding arms of nuns and priests before forcing them outside and raping them in the west porch. Then, their lust satiated for a while, the troops torched the cathedral, and stood watching with delight as its interior was consumed by fire.

The following is an account of close combat action in the jungle, but because it has a parallel to attacks on civilian hospitals, it should be included. The fighting in Burma was no less vicious than in other theatres of war, with the exception that in this particular example, mention is made of Indian National Army 'Jifs' – Japanese Inspired Fifth Column – those Indian soldiers who, as prisoners, had been persuaded to fight against the British and loyal Indian forces.

It was the afternoon of 7 February 1944, and an Advance Field Hospital was busily engaged tending casualties brought back from forward combat positions. Earlier, prior to midday, the sound and chatter of gun fire had faded into the distance as British, Indian and Ghurka troops made slow but steady gains against tenacious Japanese resistance. The afternoon wore on with the welcome calm of nature surrounding an atmosphere of released tensions if not relaxation. But it was not to last. A flanking thrust by a small but determined Japanese force was less than a mile away destined, unknowingly, to stumble upon the Field Hospital.

Inevitably, with nightfall came terrible deeds and grievous loss. Just beyond the Ngakyedauk chaung ridge were the tents, dug-outs, and ambulances of the Field Hospital, barely 300 yards from headquarters. It was a place of life and death, of devoted service by doctors and orderlies to cure the sick and save the wounded, but the Japanese made it a place of hideous memory. Accompanied by a group of 'Jifs', in a frenzied attack they entered the hospital, wiped out the protective platoon of West Yorkshires and walking wounded, killed every

orderly and doctor they could find, and massacred the seriously ill patients where they lay.

Prodding with bayonets and jabbing with the tips of samurai swords, Jifs and Japanese took wrist-watches, finger rings, personal effects and cigarettes, before stabbing men to death and turning to other tents to repeat their murderous atrocities. Some soldier patients, aware that the Field Hospital had been overrun and though seriously ill or wounded, managed to escape into the jungle and hid in its concealing protection for several days before venturing to crawl back, more dead than alive. Other patients, especially Indian ones, were taken towards Buthidaung and then shot or beheaded near a gorge, while seventeen more prisoners, sick with malaria and other tropic diseases, and tied neck to neck, were beheaded in a jungle clearing. The Japanese officers seized supplies of cotton-wool, bandages, and drugs, especially quinine, anti-tetanus, and anti-gas-gangrene serum. Every other medicament or drug remaining was deliberately destroyed.

A carrier-borne patrol sent to investigate the reason for an abrupt halt to communications from headquarters and the Field Hospital, was repulsed by grenades and machine-gun fire. Clearly, the position had been overrun by the Japanese. The desire to return the fire was overwhelming, but to have replied with guns and mortars would have meant killing friend as well as foe; the NCO patrol-leader was unaware of the massacres that had already occurred. Realizing that to risk the sole reserve company in a night attack without either a reconnaissance report or artillery support might well invite a tactical reverse, he ordered a strategic retreat to the nearest command post.

The next morning West Yorkshire companies fought their way past water-courses, skirted gorges, slashed their way through dense undergrowth and approached the enemy-occupied Field Hospital warily. It was as well that they did so. The Japanese had established machine-gun positions, cunningly concealed by stretchers in the tent-wards and operating theatres. As expected, they fiercely resisted the counter-attack, unmindful of their severe casualties and determined, it seemed, to die gloriously for the Emperor. Not until mid-morning on 9 February was the hospital finally cleared of Japanese. Subsequently, and not counting the bodies of the hospital patients executed in the gorge and at a clearing 600 yards away – and who were found the next day, the few wounded who were still alive – because they'd hidden themselves, were carried out. So too were the bodies of thirty-one patients, nine orderlies and four doctors.

In this next narrative, attention to the role that Coast Watchers played is deservedly given. Theirs was an important but lonely life isolated on atolls and islands from the tropics to the sub-Antarctic. The information that they radioed was often of immense value and assisted military and naval planners to counter the movements of enemy shipping. Some of these CW stations were installed on islands far removed from enemy activity such as Pitcairn, Raratonga, the Campbell and Auckland Islands and others. Also, the natives of islands in the tropics, deserve acknowledgement for the outstanding part they played – often putting their lives at risk, by supplying information of enemy coastal landings and forewarning Coast Watchers if they were in personal peril.

A number of these natives were killed by the Japanese for helping the Allied cause while others, in no way involved, were executed as an example of Imperial Japanese displeasure and as a warning to villagers to stop assisting the enemies of Japan. Despite this reprisal tactic, the islanders continued to pass on vital information to the Coast Watchers, providing up-to-the-minute intelligence to Allied Planners. The Coast Watchers thus, had every reason to be called 'the eyes and ears of the Pacific'.

Not all Pacific CW stations could be manned by local inhabitants. In the Pacific Islands generally there were few trained wireless operators. To overcome this shortage, native operators were trained in Tonga, Suva, at Tarawa and Funafuti. These operators later gave splendid service, though in some cases handicaps arose because of their limitations in English. This was borne out on many an occasion by the transmission of signals imperfectly phrased in quaint or pidgin English that could be alternatively a source of amusement or exasperation. Consequently, in the first few months at least, they had to be assisted by skilled European operators supplied by the New Zealand Post and Telegraph Department, and on some islands native operators had to be relieved by New Zealanders, all of who were volunteers.

Most of the islands chosen as CW stations, were quite well protected from the weather except one that is worthy of mention. Suvarov had been noted as an uninhabited island but with a good anchorage that enemy ships could use. Early in 1942 it was swamped by high seas induced by a hurricane, forcing the Coast Watchers to climb a tree to avoid being drowned. After the storm subsided, the operator had to take apart and dry out his equipment and three months went by before the station was on air again.

The United States Fleet had many shipping movements in the South Pacific, and it was arranged that Honolulu should receive everything that Auckland

received; both stations re-transmitted, automatically, signals received that had not originated with the other. By this means important signals were known almost instantly by the New Zealand and the United States naval authorities. The Pacific submarine cable played a large part in these reciprocal communications.

An idea for extending the coast-watching network to include the Gilbert and Ellice Islands was planned in May 1941, and proceeded with in July, with the parent stations being Funafuti and Beru. To operate these stations, and to man others on scattered and outlying islands, fifteen civilian operators were supplied from New Zealand. On 20 July 1941, HMS *Viti* – a requisitioned government steamer of 700 tons, left Suva to establish and leave supplies for these stations.

The Gilbert Islands were uncomfortably close to the Japanese mandated territory in the Marshalls and were placed in immediate danger upon Japan's entry into the war. In December 1941, Japanese forces occupied the northern islands of the Group – Abaiang, Makin, and Little Makin, primarily to secure their Marshalls bases from Allied observation or attack. The Japanese also visited Tarawa but, surprisingly, left its European residents alone before departing again.

Later, on Bikati Island in the Makin – Butaritari atoll, Coast Watchers observed with foreboding the entry into the lagoon of twenty-three enemy ships. Awed at the large number and their composition, a report was swiftly radioed on the Allied frequency. The next day the Japanese landed and on the following day captured the three Coast Watchers, but not before the radio and code-books were destroyed and a last distress signal sent. By now, the Japanese had captured seven New Zealanders and despite their being questioned with threats, they refused to answer or supply details about the defences of Fiji. Despite blows from a club and the flourishing of a pistol in their faces, they denied all knowledge of other coast-watching stations in the Group. Subsequently, they were taken to the nearby Marshall Islands and thereafter to Japan, where their presence aroused some curiosity because they were the first prisoners of war to face captivity in the Japanese homeland.

Strangely, the other islands of the Gilbert Group remained unmolested for the next nine months. During this period the Coast Watchers continued with their jobs of reporting shipping and aircraft movements, though well aware that their colleagues on Bikati Island had been silenced by the Japanese. Despite this unsettling knowledge, they volunteered to continue supplying information and to remain at their now dangerous posts. When inevitably, the Japanese did arrive

— and it was only a matter of time, their reports of the strength of an enemy attack and even the negative information that would be provided when they became silent would still be useful and vital to the Allies.

Towards the end of February 1942, a small coastal ship was sent to the Ellices and southern Gilberts with stores for the Coast Watchers. It was ordered to go no further than Nonouiti, where the supplies for Abemama, Maiana, and Kuria were put ashore. This precaution was wise as the ship was making the passage under trying conditions while enemy air patrols flew regular reconnaissance flights over the Gilberts. The small ship moved only at night and did not break radio silence, while during the day, it sheltered in lagoons surrounded by verdant jungle growth. Finally, with the stores unloaded, it was arranged that a half-caste should use a launch towing a lifeboat to transport the stores to the three northern stations. It is not difficult to imagine the feelings of the Coast Watchers at these posts receiving their stores by such furtive and risky means. They must have felt that they were already doomed — as indeed they were.

Some months later with the first flush of conquest over, the Japanese were beginning to encounter a slowly growing resistance to their military and expansionist aims. Leading this opposition was the United States of America — followed closely by Australia, New Zealand, and the Netherlands, to the best of their power and ability. Though the world at the time did not know it, the Netherlands East Indies, was not the prize that the Japanese had originally contemplated. Through sheer courage and gallantry, supported by Her Majesty Queen Wilhemena's wishes, the Japanese were denied the use of some oil wells and their installations, as well as large quantities of raw latex and a ready supply of mineral resources. Despite the grim promise of death, Dutch nationals throughout the East Indies endeavoured to cripple many natural resources — aware that they would take a very long time to bring back into production. The Japanese, in their fury, deliberately imposed a retaliatory regime of terror on all Dutch nationals when finally, by sheer weight of numbers, its army occupied the Netherlands's territories.

Along with these strategic reverses, both in Imperial expansion and vital resources, the ability of units of the American Fleet to sustain and supply and in turn be replenished by Australia and New Zealand, was a worrying concern to the Japanese High Command. Unaccountably, it seemed that the Allied Powers either knew in advance or anticipated major Japanese planning, and worse still, knew of the movements of troop transports and the composition of escorting naval forces. Something had to be done to remedy an intolerable

situation. (Author's note: The Japanese were unaware that the Americans had broken their military and naval codes.)

Accordingly, in the process of tightening military and naval security, the order went out to 'thoroughly inspect' every island and atoll for the presence of spies - Coast Watchers. Then the net was cast, producing surprising results and more than a little astonishment. Coast-Watching stations were discovered in the Gilbert and Ellice Islands and at Tarawa, so close to Japanese Territory, the possibility had not been considered seriously enough, much to the anger and chagrin of the Japanese. Coincidentally, orders had been given for the occupation of some of the adjacent islands to the south, including Tarawa, nearly nine months to the day after coast-watching personnel at Bikati Island had been captured.

Seventeen New Zealand Coast Watchers, seven wireless operators and ten soldiers, were ultimately discovered and taken prisoner following the searches of all atolls and islands and the occupation of larger islands designated. The prisoners were transferred to Tarawa following their capture and were tied to coconut trees in front of the Japanese commandant's house for three whole days and nights, after which they were confined in the native lunatic asylum enclosure where they were joined by five civilians and the Government wireless operator at Tarawa who had also been rounded up. Then, for the next few weeks, all of the prisoners were forced to work crushing and spreading coral or unloading shipping at the wharf.

At 2.00 pm on 15 October 1942, - it was a hot cloudless day, United States forces bombed and shelled Tarawa. In the confusion and fright that reigned, one prisoner, believed to have been a civilian dashed from the asylum enclosure and ran exultingly along the beach, gesticulating excitedly at the American planes. Armed Korean labourers searched the village for him and, sighting him by the shore, shot him immediately. After the raid was over, the local natives emerged from what shelter they could find and resumed whatever they were doing before the Allied attack. Most of them returned to the wharf where they were compelled to work under the hateful glares of Korean guards. Only the elderly, women and children, remained in or about the village.

In the late afternoon while male natives toiled on the wharf and the village women began preparing evening meals, a horrendous crime was about to happen. The Japanese intended to behead all the prisoners. Opinion is generally agreed, that the dominant motive for this wholesale slaughter, was one of vengeance and reprisal for the air raid earlier in the afternoon. Post-discussions

on this atrocity dismiss a previously held contention that it was a civilian who used his sword to carry out the executions. It was customary for army officers and NCOs but not civilians to wear swords, and as there was a military presence on the island, it is difficult to accept that a civilian would have usurped the authority of an officer – or an NCO for that matter. The more likely hypothesis suggests that it was indeed an officer with homicidal tendencies, but then, with no reliable witness other than a very young native boy, it is pertinent to argue that the executioner, with so many murders to perform, may well have removed his uniform tunic and cap. Thus prepared, and naked from the waist up, it would be difficult to determine his status, though so far as official records testify, it was a civilian official in charge of Korean labourers.

At an inquiry into the Tarawa murders – so described, by an official of the Western Pacific High Commission in October 1944, the previously mentioned eye-witness gave the following evidence.

At about five o'clock in the evening on the day of the American air raid, I heard a good deal of noise from the Asylum enclosure and saw the European prisoners inside, kneeling in a long line surrounded by a number of Japanese guards. A dead European was dragged out from inside the asylum building and placed in front of the other prisoners. [It was assumed that this was the prisoner shot on the beach.] Then one Japanese started to behead the Europeans . . . I did not see any more because I fainted.

The Coast Watchers who were murdered on Tarawa (and Sergeant Third on Ocean Island) were posthumously mentioned in despatches 'For exemplary conduct in coast-watching and communications duties in the Gilbert Islands area in the face of the enemy, and with the knowledge that relief or escape was impossible'. Looking back one cannot help but wonder at the negligence of the 'appropriate authorities' in permitting young civilian employees of the NZ Post and Telegraph Department to be sent to such dangerous areas as wireless operators without being supplied with military uniforms and registered as serving members of the armed forces.

The civilian status of some of the Coast Watchers who had been captured previously and transported to Japan, had caused some anxiety in New Zealand because as civilians doing work of an essentially military character they justified, in the eyes of the Japanese, their execution as spies. Belatedly, it was decided in January 1944, that the Coast Watchers imprisoned in Japan, should be given military rank retrospectively to their date of capture, so that their dependants

would be eligible for pension rights and other privileges. The other civilian Coast Watchers were enrolled in the army retrospectively from 1 December 1942, when all those who had been captured in the southern Gilberts and Tarawa had already been murdered.

It should be pointed out that the network of Coast Watchers was made up of civilians from every walk in life. As the Japanese swept across the Pacific, island administrators, traders, plantation owners, even a few school teachers, voluntarily stayed behind when the Japanese invaded their Islands – their knowledge of the local terrain and friendship with the local natives, assisting them to exist safely in concealment and to report on the movements of Japanese troops, aircraft and shipping. But not all of these gallant men evaded capture and death. As Admiral Halsey acknowledged, 'the intelligence signalled by Coast Watchers from Bougainville . . . had saved Guadalcanal, and Guadalcanal had saved the South Pacific', he said when paying tribute to the Coast Watchers whose voluntary dedication helped turn the tide against the Japanese.

Such was the importance accorded to the establishment, where possible, of coast-watching stations that local authorities gave the utmost assistance. At Rarotonga, in the Cook Islands, for instance, where there was already a Government radio station serving outlying islands as well as maintaining direct contact with New Zealand, some of the earliest Coast Watchers, were members of the local Boys' Brigade, age certainly, being no barrier. To them all, tribute must be paid.

CAPTIVITY:

A CHRONICLE OF CRUELTY

Hundreds of Allied prisoners transported to Japan, could count themselves lucky if they made it to the land of the Mikado. Many Japanese ships were torpedoed *en route* and sank with hundreds of prisoners cramming their holds with no chance of escape. The hatches covering these cargo holds were securely battened down preventing those who were able, to escape the horror of drowning. With such torpedoed ships doomed, the Japanese guards on deck callously ignored the shouts and shrieks of imprisoned men below. Instead, if battens were breached and prisoners began scrambling out to the deck, they were ruthlessly shot for attempting to escape. Mercifully, if that is the correct word, up to 500 prisoners would suffer sudden death if the torpedo exploded in their hold – if not by concussive blast, then by instant drowning.

The Japanese, after the war, relied heavily on these ships sinking as an excuse for the inordinately high number of prisoners of war deaths. But what they failed to reveal was their bloody-mindedness in ensuring that the unfortunate prisoners went down with the ships. Deviously, they switched the blame to Allied submarines for the huge loss of life that was repeated many times over as many more Japanese ships fell victim to torpedoes. Not surprisingly and conversely, Japanese casualties were comparatively light. They knew how to save themselves.

The scores of thousands taken prisoner by the Japanese had one bitter memory in common. They were treated with needless brutality. 'If ever hate and contempt was personified in a particular race, then it had to be the Japanese,' a prisoner of war wrote in his post-war recollections. 'They have the charm of Satan and Lunacy,' wrote another. 'I shall never forget or forgive,' was entered in an ex-prisoner's diary and found, five months after the war had

ended – he had succumbed to wounds and disease while a prisoner of the Japanese.

The soldiers of Nippon never did things by halves. If a prisoner failed to bow properly when a soldier passed by, or if he couldn't rise to his feet – through sickness – when ordered to, then punishment of unnecessary brutality was administered. Face slapping akin to thuggery, was endured in stoical resignation even if the punishment turned to clenched fist battery. Then, there were other methods of 'Nippon discipline' often imposed for the merest infraction of camp rules, these included being lashed with a heavy wooden stick or a stout length of green bamboo cane or, being subjected to a vicious assault with a rifle butt. Whatever the punishment, it was administered with great vigour along with an inherent imbecilic glee. Often those who were sick and suffering from malnutrition did not survive these beatings, dying within a few hours.

Walking skeletons would be an apt description of many prisoners. Emaciated and with rib-cages protruding and weakened by deliberate malnutrition, these pathetic victims would totter around seeking food where there was none while insects gorged on their festering ulcers. With gaunt expressions and deep-sunk eyes, these once hale and healthy men survived from one day to the next, ever at the mercy of their dispassionate guards. To those who perished in such captivity, death was a merciful release. No more the harsh rays of a tropic sun, that sapped scarce energy. No more the curse of leeches and mosquitoes, and diseases including beri-beri, dysentery, cholera, gangrene or malaria. And, too, no more starvation, forced labour and brutal treatment from the Japanese guards. Under such appalling conditions, death was not feared, it was welcomed.

Not only were there armed forces prisoner of war camps, there were civilian ones too. The Japanese made no distinction between either except to separate the women from their men-folk in civilian camps. Then, for some peculiar reason of the Japanese mentality, European boys were separated from their parents and placed in special labour camps where, on occasions, a number of them were molested by their guards. This form of harassment was mild by comparison with that experienced by some of the women prisoners. It is known that at least 240 Netherlands women, most of whose husbands were in prison camps, if not dead, were forced to work as common whores in 'Comfort Stations' (brothels). This disgraceful compulsion to gratify the sexual lusts of the Japanese troops was done in such a way that they had no choice. They were reminded that they had children who were under the benevolent protection of

the Imperial Japanese Army. Such benevolence could not be guaranteed to continue if the women did not co-operate. Clearly, with so many indigenous females available to force into prostitution, the action by the Japanese to force the European women to be whores, was a racist desire to belittle and degrade them in the eyes of the Indonesian locals, and to make Nippon look superior.

Not one ex-prisoner of war interviewed for these chronicles, was able coherently to describe the characteristics of their former captors. Invective and profanity appeared to cloud their recollections, and after listening to them, one could understand why. 'Bloody mongrels!' said one curt digger from Australia, 'Here, take a gander at this, mate', he invited. He flicked up a trouser leg and briefly displayed a prosthetic limb from the knee downwards. 'I'll tell you how it happened, mate', he offered. Combat yarns were usually interesting, but what I heard occurred inside a Japanese prisoner of war camp a few days before Japan surrendered.

The camp latrines, crude affairs, were periodically re-sited and the old holes in the ground filled in. A party of POWs were assigned this unpleasant task and were carrying fresh earth from the new holes to fill in the old ones when a Japanese NCO came along to inspect their work. Known to all the prisoners in the camp as 'TIS', an abbreviation for 'Tojo's illegitimate son', he had the reputation of being the most cruel of all the guards and, it was whispered darkly, responsible for countless deaths both on work parties outside the camp and within.

Unexpectedly and to the astonishment of the work party, the NCO sank through the soft earth covering a freshly filled hole and was up to his armpits before his descent slowed. Screaming anger at the embarrassing occurrence, nearby guards hurried to his assistance. Eventually hauled out of the foul-smelling morass and covered in excreta, he looked an amusing if not pathetic sight. The circumstance was too much for one Australian prisoner who was unable to contain his mirth. Unfortunately for him, the NCO dashed towards him drawing his sword then, in blind fury, began beating him with the flat of the blade. During the beating the prisoner was cut several times and with the last stroke, a deliberate one with the sword's edge aimed behind the right knee, his leg was half severed.

Not satisfied with the punishment, the NCO ordered that the prisoner be carried to one of the old holes not yet filled in and to be lowered in a standing position. Then, waist high in excreta, his fellow prisoners were forced to fill in the hole all the way up to his neck, with only his head protruding. To ensure

that no aid was given to the seriously wounded prisoner, a guard was especially posted and maintained for the next twenty-four hours before his fellow prisoners were permitted to dig him out – more dead than alive.

With no drugs or medicaments, the camp doctors, prisoners themselves, could only wash and clean the many cuts already turning septic, while despairing for the leg which was inflamed around the sword slash and certain to develop gangrene. The prisoner meanwhile, developed a high fever before lapsing into unconsciousness. The doctors knew it, 'TIS', the cruel NCO knew it, that without proper medical facilities, amputation of the leg following the onset of gangrene would be an inevitability, with the prospect of death more than likely. Then fortuitously, the war ended dramatically. In the nick of time – more to save the prisoner's life than his leg, Allied forces liberated the camp and swiftly provided medical attention to all those who were sick or dying. The Australian prisoner's life was saved, but not his leg. 'TIS', the sadistic NCO, fled the camp without trace and was never brought to justice. Many other Japanese war criminals like him, sought anonymity in the obscurities of changed identity and, who through lack of success in finding them, can only be presumed to have committed *hara-kiri*, or more probably, returned to Japan disguised as ordinary privates with papers and pay-books borrowed from dead colleagues. Truly, this surviving Australian soldier's comment, 'bloody mongrels', considering his treatment at the hands of the Japanese, was mild rebuke indeed.

Between 1942 and 1945, in the territories conquered by the Japanese armed forces, tens of thousands of innocent civilians were murdered, usually in circumstances of the most barbarous cruelty and in an orgy of widespread and deliberate massacres, that has shamed the name 'soldiers of Nippon' up to the present day.

One of the earliest known slaughters occurred at Balikpapan in Borneo on 20 January 1942. Two Netherlands officer prisoners of war were sent to Balikpapan by the Japanese to convey an ultimatum to the Netherlands commandant demanding the capitulation of Balikpapan intact. This ultimatum was prepared by a Japanese major-general in collusion with five of his aides. In due course it was delivered, but the commandant replied that he had prior orders from his superiors to carry out certain demolitions and had no alternative but to obey them.

On the approach of Japanese forces the oilfields erupted into flames. Furious at the destruction that ensued and unmindful of the commandant's courage, the enraged Japanese then proceeded to massacre the entire white population of

Balikpapan by driving most of them into the sea and there machine-gunning men, women and children to death. Others had previously been killed in wholesale beheadings. This carnage was an atrocity of the first order, but was not executed primarily at the sight of the valuable oilfields going up in flames. It was supported by a preliminary draft of a Japanese Foreign Office 'classified' memorandum, issued on 4 October 1940, on the reviewal of 'Japan's policies towards the Southern Regions'. Thus murder and mayhem was approved.

There is no reason to doubt that this atrocity was in line with the Foreign Office directive, because a similar slaughter of civilians happened in Blora as a result of demolition of the oilfields at Tjepu in Java. All the white males were rounded up and put to the sword. It is generally agreed that the beheadings were part of a calculated policy of terror and bloody intimidation, designed to extract obedience from the native population as well as to prove the superiority of Japanese troops. However, the soldiers of Nippon did display some benevolence. The women's lives were spared, but only to be raped many times in the presence of the vengeful Japanese commander.

Atrocities of this magnitude and bestiality in the Netherlands East Indies were not isolated examples of depraved soldiering. Between December 1941 and April 1942, massacres of this nature and intensity occurred at no less than thirty-seven different places in the East Indies, with the resultant murders numbering thousands.

As already mentioned all 'harmful documents' that could attest to Japan's criminal conduct against helpless civilians and captured armed services personnel, were destroyed intentionally; thus, the 'Foreign Office memorandum' dealing with the 'disposition of 'the captured enemy' was 'removed'. However, when Yamamoti, a former high official in the Japanese Foreign Office, was asked why the contents of the infamous 'memorandum' were carried out so faithfully, he cynically replied that 'the secretaries responsible, were very good students and like commanders in the field, carried out orders to the letter'.

Atrocities occurred everywhere in countries under Japanese occupation. This mindless pursuit of death and its imposition gave the Japanese a dreadful and fearsome reputation. Soldiering was one thing, but premeditated mass slaughter quite another. It was not war. It was genocide and carried out with a ferocity to Japan's undying shame. Hong Kong, Borneo, Sumatra, Malaya, Tarawa, Java, New Guinea, the Moluccas, Burma, China, Korea, the Philippines, New Britain, the Andaman Islands, Manchuria, Formosa and Singapore, all these territories, suffered dreadfully under Japanese 'benevolence'. Many victims were

raped, tortured and murdered to satisfy the blood-lust of the uncivilized Japanese hordes.

In such an atmosphere of death and destruction and embracing so many lands and cultures, the arrival of the Japanese was not just an act of conquest. It was much more than that. It signalled a reign of terror and murder that in many instances, far surpassed the excesses of the Nazis – their concentration camps excluded.

The overriding fear attributed to the Japanese was their unpredictability, and the conscious knowledge that with less than seventy-five years experience of modern civilization, their mentality was prone to slip back a thousand years where the cults of samurai and bushido, with all its blood-letting, prevailed. This was no idle conjecture as history reveals. Prior to the arrival of Commodore Perry's black ships at Tokyo Bay in the early 1870s, Japan was a mystical secluded and somewhat introverted country, and by the standard of the times, extremely backward. But, by copying things Western, at which they were masters, the Japanese nation, with a thirst for knowledge had, within a short period of thirty years, stepped into the twentieth century as the most advanced Asian nation, even including possession of a naval fleet comparable with most others in the world.

Unfortunately, a country that by-passes a thousand years by propulsion rather than by natural evolution, gains a lot materially, but loses a lot culturally. Social evolution does not come suddenly. It is a learning period that only time can put together. Personal values and beliefs require time to adjust to the passage of centuries. What was normal conduct in the tenth century and adhered to right up to the 1870s, became totally inappropriate and an anachronism to Japan's too quick an embrace of all things Western. Material progress there was, but not cultural. This could well explain Japan's resort to barbaric practises and its deep-seated propensity for employing deviousness, duplicity and treachery, to achieve its ends. The norms of civilized behaviour had to be learned, and in Japan's case, the hard way. But sadly, many countries suffered in this learning transition.

Few war books or writers pursue the destruction and grievous loss of life in human terms that wars of aggression and expansion precipitate. For politicians, such conflicts of naked aggression seemingly end in peace treaties where aggressor nations are exculpated and granted absolution, no matter the enormity of their misdeeds. For scores of thousands of ordinary people, a war does not end when the guns cease firing. There is the human cost, where lives were

either disrupted or, needlessly and violently extinguished. Is there no accountability?

The examples of atrocities – amply demonstrated in these chronicles make compelling reading, if only to differentiate between acts of conflict (war) and criminal terror and mayhem against helpless civilians and prisoners of war. It was the politicians who, for reasons of political expediency, absolved Japan of all liability for its war of aggression and the thousands of war crimes it permitted. No thought was given to the legitimate claims of millions of its victims – that is those who survived, and to whom justice meant accountability conforming to the highest moral standards of honesty.

Certainly, many war criminals were punished, thus a type of vengeance was exacted, but this punitive measure missed as many war criminals as it caught. Then, there was the exoneration bestowed upon acts of looting, seizure of property and, or, its wilful destruction along with whole families as well as thousands of innocent civilians who were murdered in most wilful and deliberate massacres. Their lives and their property, forfeit to Japanese barbarity was, with such resulting destitution and suffering of surviving kinsfolk, utterly ignored for higher political consideration by their own insensitive national leaders. If ever there was a travesty of justice, this was it.

It is pertinent to pause briefly and to reflect on the outcome of another military conflict that not only involved the United States (among others), but which divided the nation. This was the Vietnam war, a conflict of attrition that dragged on interminably, where America held the advantages of modern and sophisticated weaponry that could have, should have, ended the war conclusively in South Vietnam's favour but, contrarily, ended in an ignominious defeat. Once against the telling power of an Asian country's major resource, similar to Japan's, was its substantial population and the limitless number of Vietcong available from this resource. America seemingly, had not learned its lesson when at war with Japan. It was futile to believe that an Asian country – with its millions, could be defeated without a corresponding manpower reserve to overcome such an important military consideration, modern technology not withstanding.

What really provokes this insertion of the Vietnam interlude is, that due to public pressure and demonstration within the United States and elsewhere opposing this unpopular war, the politicians, gradually realizing the growing resentment and hostility of the elector, decided to withdraw their forces from a country where it had no moral right to be involved, in the first place.

The voice of the people, though opposed and divided, won the day. Public pressure was more than sufficient to compel the Government to heed the resentment of the people. Instances of Draft-Card burning and the fleeing of Draft-Card dodgers (President Bill Clinton was said to be one) compelled finally, a tactical withdrawal from Vietnam. It is notable that the Vietcong did not sink unsuspecting naval fleets, nor did they rampage through Asia and the South Pacific wreaking death and destruction in a war of diabolical savagery. They fought their war with the aim of national reunification of North and South Vietnam, whether right or wrong they may have been in the eyes of the non-Communist world. At least, and it should be recognized, cold-blooded massacres and beheading of prisoners was not on their agenda. They did certainly resort to excesses peculiar to Asian whims, but their acts of punishment against prisoners were not primarily genocidal; they were more retributory, likened to defenders punishing aggressors – a retaliatory exegesis.

But here the similarity ends. Because victorious North Vietnam was Communist – the catalyst for America's involvement in the first place, the political atmosphere following the ending of hostilities continued to remain unaccommodating and decidedly unfriendly. Thus, for the past twenty years or more, the United States enforced an economic boycott on a unified and now peaceful Vietnam. Paradoxically, in many way, this economic and trade boycott back-fired on America itself. Though American Big Business observed this boycott, other countries including Japan, paid lip service to it only and, covertly at first, resumed the proscribed trade with Vietnam despite America's annoyance and certain financial disadvantages.

Comparing Japan with Vietnam raises some interesting anomalies with regards to political consideration and foreign policy in so far as America was concerned. For more than two decades, America isolated itself from Vietnam other than to establish necessary contacts to assist in locating its war dead and to ascertain if there were any surviving United States servicemen still being held prisoner.

Japan on the other hand, and by far the worst adversary, benefited from an indulgent Allied occupation following the Second World War and despite its horrific crimes, was assisted with massive economic aid and American investment that must have made these former 'Sons of Heaven' blink their eyes in astonishment. Though Japan had lost its war of aggression, making the Vietnam conflict look like a skirmish in military terms, it became the recipient of American largesse that in many ways compensated its loss of territories and

surrender. The dictum that crime does not pay could in Japan's instance, be seriously challenged.

Consequent to Japan's defeat, it went through a comparatively short period of hardship and reconstruction before – with American capitalism and a changed Foreign Policy, industry and investment began to thrive – and once revived there was no stopping it. As well, self-rule was restored and the sanctity of the Imperial Household maintained. War crimes and atrocities were, for political considerations absolved and, best of all, restitution and compensation that so many of their victims should have received, was exonerated without consultation with their hundreds of thousands of war victims.

It must be stated that if the Allied signatories to the peace treaty with Japan were happy with the destruction and loss that the Japanese had caused, even to the point of not demanding war reparation, then perhaps, as representatives of the various nations involved, they had the political power, if not the right, to conclude this hasty normalization of relations. But, the politicians erred grievously in presuming to include absolution for crimes against humanity that quite properly and under the 'Charter of the United Nations' should have been arbitrated separately.

Some historians argue that this 'crimes against humanity absolution' was not specifically addressed in context, thus leaving a grey area of uncertainty. Politicians of former Allied nations approached today, resort to long-winded letters of patent evasiveness as to why their governments cannot support claims by their supplicant constituents for compensation from Japan for 'Human Rights Violations'. Never once do they admit that the 'exoneration' of all claims in this 'treaty of convenience' was an usurpation of legal redress, more properly within the integrity of individual or collective consent or dissent of those victims, so callously disregarded.

Close investigation of this 'political attitude' reveals a surreptitious desire not to offend Japan because of its importance as a valued trading partner. Let bygones be bygones, though not explicitly stated, is the negative response inferred but, as an insincere palliative to salve natural resentments, such political letters do advise awareness of 'alleged Japanese Human Rights Violations' being petitioned before the United Nations General Assembly in New York. These concluding comments end with the advice that 'The Government regrets its inability to support the claims of individuals or associations against Japan or, with financial assistance to support representation of such claims at the United Nations.'

This modern-day 'political attitude' pays no respect to our war dead who gave their all that we might be free. Soldiers and civilians who were unfortunate enough to be captured by the Japanese in the Second World War but survived, could be forgiven if they told their descendants that politicians were worse than second-hand car salesmen and not to trust them. Whatever one draws from these conclusions, one striking fact emerges and it is this. There was a travesty of justice from which Japan has benefited hugely. Though it lost the war it won the peace through political expediency and was assisted greatly to become the rich economic Power that it is today. Not so its victims, as the chronicle attests. The litany of horror forever scarred in their minds, the rapes, torture, starvation, beheadings, deliberate malnutrition, disease, all these reprehensible atrocities were never compensated. The question must be asked. Why?

Earlier, the guile and deceit of the Japanese was referred to. No matter in what area of concern, lies, cunning, duplicity and lack of conscience was their hallmark. Morality, too, was a barren resource. How difficult then must it have been for the Allied authorities to prove crimes by so many millions of men serving in the Japanese armed forces with such odious characteristics? Murder and death was explained by 'superior orders' by those criminals who rampaged across every theatre of war, virtually a law unto themselves. But there were others, thousands more, who in many instances and on their own volition, raped, murdered and plundered. Like crazed robots and in a primitive uncivilized manner, they took it upon themselves to indulge in needless acts of barbarity with or without the approval of their superiors. That is why the term 'millions of men' is employed, because certain it is that with such a vast indictment of atrocities, a relentless litany of horror, in all theatres of war, it would need such numbers to support the credibility of so much slaughter.

Challenged about the widespread brutality and death wreaked by the Imperial Japanese Forces, and their shocking treatment of prisoners of war, Japanese leaders, both government and military, downplayed the chronicle of horror, first by denying culpability and second, by describing them as 'unfortunate incidents'. True to form and evasive as ever, they averred that the 'incidents' were regrettable and though proved, were not officially sanctioned. Such lies were commonplace and quite rightly disbelieved.

The following are just two examples of Japanese deceit. With the prospect of defeat staring Japan in the face and suddenly having a return of conscience – though guilty it must have been, the swift despatch of orders to officers in the field, enumerating cover-up procedures was circulated. Despite the order

to destroy all incriminating documents, some survived the Japanese surrender and are summarized hereunder, providing striking testimony of Japan's guilty knowledge.

INTERNATIONAL PROSECUTION SECTION BRITISH DIVISION

Page One

Document No, 2701 - V8X - 1X3. (Certified as Exhibit 'O' in Doc' 2687)

From the records of the Taiwan POW Camp HQ in Taihoku. Entry 1st August, 1944.

- (1) (Entries about money: promotions of Formosans at Branch camps including promotion of Yo Yu-toku to 1st Keibiin - 5 entries)
- (2) The following answer about the extreme measures for POW's was sent to the Chief-of-Staff of the 11th Unit (Formosa POW Security No' 10).

'Under the present situation if there were a mere explosion or fire, a shelter for the time being could be had in nearby buildings such as the school, a warehouse, or the like. However, at such time as the situation became urgent and it be extremely important, the POW's will be concentrated and confined in their present location and under heavy guard while the preparation for their disposition * is made.'

The time and method of this disposition is as follows.

(1) The time

Although the basic aim is to act under superior orders, *individual disposition* * may be made in the following order:

- (a) When an uprising of large numbers cannot be suppressed without the use of firearms.
- (b) When escapees from the camp may turn into a hostile fighting force.

* Disposition - denotes murder.

(2) **The Methods**

- (a) Whether they are destroyed individually or in groups or however it is done, with mass bombing, poisonous gas or smoke, oral poison, drowning, decapitation or whatever, dispose of them as the situation dictates.
- (b) In any case, it is the aim not to allow the escape of a single one, to annihilate them all, and not to leave any traces.

(3) **To: The Commanding General**

The Commanding General of Military Police. Reported matters conferred on the 11th Unit, the Kiirun Fortified Area H.Q., and each prefecture concerning the *extreme security in Taiwan POW Camps*.

- (4) (The next entry concerns the will of a deceased POW).

I hereby certify that this is a true translation of an entry in the records of the Taiwan POW H.Q. in Taiwan, entry 1st August, 1944.

Signed: Stephen H. Green.

This an exhibit marked 'O' referred to in the affidavit of: JAMES THOMAS NEHEMIAH CROSS.

Such barbarous plans for the liquidation of prisoner of war camps was not only contemplated, but sanctioned. Only the dropping of the atom bombs and the precipitate surrender of Japan, prevented this horrendous death wish from being carried out – not in just one isolated camp, but in them all. The consequent loss of life would have been appalling. The following two extracts sum up Japanese deviousness and the complicity of its leaders in encouraging war criminals to vanish into obscurity.

- (1) Documents which would be *unfavourable for us* in the hands of the enemy, are to be treated in the same way as secret documents and destroyed.
- (2) Personnel who *ill-treated prisoners-of-war and internees*, or who are held in *extremely bad odour* by them, are permitted to take care of the situation by immediately transferring or *fleeing without trace*.

And many thousands of war criminals, did just that. Such perfidious advice from the highest echelons of both the Government and the Military, despite the imminence of Japan's formal surrender, removed any doubts as to their own

guilty consciences. Notable, too, was the fact that despite accepting the terms of the Potsdam Declaration and its conditions, every effort was made not only to protect the Emperor's future, but to ensure that those in the field who would surely be tried as war criminals, were given every assistance to 'flee without trace'. This treachery was surreptitiously enabled, even for a few days after Japan's surrender, by the falsification and issuance of lists under the heading, 'Missing in Action' or 'Killed in Action'. Even in defeat, Japan resorted to deception which was largely successful right to the bitter end.

But such were the numbers of war crimes, and so numerous were the perpetrators, that the Allied Tribunals had their hands full with those who were taken into custody. Perhaps the most difficult task for Allied investigators after the war, was to track down the murderers who had summarily executed Allied pilots unfortunate enough to bale out of their planes only to be captured by the Japanese on landing. Many air crews were executed where they touched ground – usually by instant beheading. These were extremely hard to investigate as by the very nature of the circumstances, aircraft shot down and their crews could drop out of the sky anywhere. It was chance where they parachuted and lucky indeed if they were only taken prisoner, though imprisonment was nothing to be looked forward to. In the majority of these executions, the perpetrators could not be traced.

Equally difficult to investigate, were the atrocities committed at sea. Here it would be true to say 'dead men tell no tales'. It was known that following Japan's war reverses, and subsequent to an order intercepted by the Allies, not only ships but their crews, were 'marked for annihilation'. This directive was totally illegal and against all the civilized rules of warfare, but then, the Japanese did not play by the rules. The message to Japanese naval vessels is set out hereunder.

From: Truk Island. Directive to Japanese submarines and warships. 20-3-43. 'All Imperial Naval vessels are ordered to not only sink ships and cargoes. Must at same time carry out complete destruction of crews and passengers. If possible capture ships' masters to secure information. Repeat, there must be no survivors'.

Commander.

First Submarine Force.

Truk.

Prior to the capture of Truk by the Allies, it was an important Japanese Naval

base and was commanded by an admiral with no scruples or respect for the lives of helpless merchant seamen. It was this callous order that resulted in lifeboats being rammed, shot to pieces by machine-gun fire, or blasted with hand grenades. With such blood-thirsty devotion to duty, particularly by Japanese submarine crews, the death toll of merchant seamen rose steeply. Regrettably, the identity of many of these Japanese submarines and their commanders responsible, vanished into obscurity beneath the sea upon completion of their slaughters, slinking away to hunt and attack more merchant ships and kill their crews.

That war could descend to such depravity was viewed by the Allies with considerable alarm, particularly with the knowledge that lifeboat survivors could not possibly be a military threat. So concerned did the Allied Powers become that orders were issued recommending the abandonment of unescorted voyages of merchant ships – no matter how fast they were. Convoys were considered the safer option. Though ships could still be sunk at least, with escorting warships, it would be a brave Japanese submarine commander who would have the nerve to surface primarily to massacre survivors in a lifeboat, the presence of an Allied cruiser or destroyer almost certainly guaranteeing his own destruction.

But of even worse concern was the news that other specialized forms of collective slaughter were being practised on the high seas. This entailed the surfacing of a Japanese submarine – after a merchant ship had been sunk, then, with murder in mind, and a couple of helpless lifeboats in view, the submarine would be steered towards them following which, the ship's survivors would be ordered to clamber aboard the submarine's casements – but rescue it was not. After being searched and stripped of personal effects including rings and watches, the survivors had their hands bound behind their backs and made to kneel. Then systematically, the Japanese beheaded their victims one by one, it was on an occasion such as this and after twenty-seven seamen had been executed that a lookout yelled in alarm. On the horizon, with a curling bow-wave indicating high speed, an Allied destroyer was sighted.

None the less, the executions continued with another three decapitations before, with remarkable accuracy, a shell exploded just slightly astern of the submarine's length. Sheathing their samurai swords, the officers clambered up the side of the conning tower in considerable haste and disappeared within. There were four survivors still kneeling on the blood-soaked casements as with an imperceptible dipping of the bow, the submarine began to dive.

While the executions were being carried out – it was a 16-year-old cabin-boy who was the first to be beheaded – his chum, a seaman-boy also aged 16, had knelt last in the line fearful and horrified at the fate that was moving inexorably towards him. He had retched twice as heads regularly dropped to the casements while blood spurted from severed trunks. Japanese seamen had laughed at his natural terror and vomiting, but only briefly, they were more interested in watching the samurai swords parting heads from shoulders.

With his back to the sea on the submarine's starboard side and his hands out of sight, the seaman-boy managed to slip his bonds and waited. It was his intention to throw himself into the water and seek refuge behind one of the nearby lifeboats. Instead, the gun fire from an approaching warship changed his desperate resolve. As the submarine began to submerge he swiftly untied the bindings of a junior engineer, and then with his help, the bonds of the ship's carpenter and an officers' steward. As the submarine slid beneath the surface, the lifeboats swung towards them, drawn by its downward plunge. Despite the presence of sharks, all four survivors managed to clamber aboard one of the lifeboats and with considerable thankfulness, awaited the arrival of what turned out to be an American destroyer. Had this warship not noticed the submarine's conning tower, this first-hand account of Japanese barbarity could never have been told.

With such compelling evidence of atrocity on the high seas, the Allied Powers, through the Swiss Representative in Tokyo, protested in the strongest terms. But, as was expected the Japanese, Government disclaimed all knowledge of murders at sea. In the language of politics and intermediary diplomacy, nothing further could be done other than to remind the Japanese that such atrocities would be remembered at war's end and prosecuted. Truly, the Japanese were proving to be an intractable and intransigent foe and very much strangers to the truth. At the time it was wondered if deception and deviousness, were not national traits peculiar to their culture, along with a psychopathic idiosyncrasy, if not lust for killing.

CHINA'S BLOODBATH

Japan's war with the Western Powers was to continue for nearly four years with great bitterness and much bloodshed, until the unconditional surrender in 1945. Throughout its duration, wherever Japanese forces went, carnage, destruction, rape, torture and massacres, attended their conquests. So heinous were their atrocities and of so barbarous a nature, by officers and men alike, that the world gasped disbelievingly as mountains of evidence, revealed before the War Crimes Tribunals, became known. If ever a country deserved the title 'Nation of Shame', it surely had to be Japan.

The International Military Tribunal had this to say in its judgemental summation at Tokyo.

During a period of several months this Tribunal has heard evidence from witnesses who testified in detail to atrocities committed in all theatres of war on a scale so vast, yet following so common a pattern, that only one conclusion is possible. The atrocities were either secretly ordered, or wilfully permitted by the Japanese Government, or individual members thereof, and by the leaders of the armed forces.

Many of the accused war criminals were never brought to trial – particularly those who had served in the field. Witnesses who could have identified them, had been executed or were so gravely ill that *prima facie* charges were never pressed because they would have failed in law. The composition of the Japanese armed forces involved millions of men and would have entailed a herculean, nigh impossible, task to bring thousands of murderers to justice. For their part, the Japanese proved to be a recalcitrant and remorseless enigma and, through convenient disappearance, deviousness, and faked records of 'being killed in action', avoided the punishments they so richly deserved.

It is notable that throughout Japan's reign of military conquest, and where its forces of occupation prevailed, there was no respect for the law or human

rights. Torture and execution were so commonplace, that these methods of enforcement became the law. Trials were few though executions were many. Conversely, after Japan was defeated, many war criminals sought protection from prosecution or were defended at their trials, by utilizing the very tenets of law that they themselves, when murdering their victims, totally ignored.

Equally noteworthy, was the Japanese penchant for describing a number of instances of atrocities and mayhem as, 'unfortunate incidents'. By adroit use of language skills, aggression and murder were temporized and exemplified in the most innocuous phraseology, an exercise of phonemics deliberately propagated to conceal, if not lessen, the enormity of numerous barbarities. As an example of verbal polemics, often employed to justify their actions, the Japanese resorted to describing specific instances of aggression in euphemistic nomenclature that, to the world, if not to themselves, had the ring of deceit. The 'China Incident' is but one example.

The hostilities in China constituted, not a war, but an 'incident', and the Chinese army that fought Japanese aggression were not soldiers, but 'bandits'. This was an interpretation deviously foisted upon the world by Japan's leaders. Thus, the Chinese soldiers taken in battle by Japanese troops were, unfortunately, denied the status of prisoners of war and, to justify their unenviable fates as 'bandits' it was persistently maintained that 'in the conduct of such hostilities the laws and customs of war did not apply and need not be observed'.

Therefore, the scores of thousands of Chinese soldiers taken in numerous battles by Japanese troops were regarded, and treated, as 'bandits'. Thousands of them were massacred, tortured, or drafted into Japanese labour camps, the most infamous of which was Pengpu. With what statistics are available – despite a Japanese cover-up – it was a transit and redistribution camp, approximately 240,000 'bandits' passed through its gates. Less than 70,000 eventually made it to other camps where inevitably, most of them also perished. In another camp on the Island of Houshu, and though a minor example by comparison, nearly 50% of a forced labour unit, 900 strong, died of deliberate starvation or the results of mindless brutality and torture.

A nation countenancing such bestiality would have to be criminally depraved if not, in some measure, insane. Yet, the answer to these uncivilized atrocities as made by the Japanese themselves was, 'to punish the people of China for their refusal to acknowledge the superiority and leadership of the Japanese race and to co-operate with them'. The Nanking slaughter was justified as a military

necessity as a consequence. It reached its peak in a crime that can never be forgotten – the massacre of over 200,00 Chinese civilians and 'bandit' prisoners of war in the first six weeks of the city's occupation. The mindless ferocity of this wholesale slaughter can never be expunged from the pages of Nanking's history.

They looted, they burned, they raped and they murdered. Japanese soldiers roamed all over the city night and day. Many were crazed with drink along with the euphoria of senseless blood-letting, all done in the name of the Emperor. Soldiers marched through the streets indiscriminately killing, their bayonets dripping with blood. Chinese of both sexes, adults and children alike, were massacred. On a number of instances, babies were torn from their mother's arms and flung high into the air before being impaled on waiting bayonets as they fell. This example of carnage went on continuously for over forty days until the gutters ran with blood and the streets were littered with the bodies, numbering tens of thousands, of their victims.

Rape and aberrational sex were the pastimes enjoyed between the excitement of killing, and resistance by the victims or by members of their families who tried to protect them, meant certain death. Neither youth or old-age was respected. Girls of tender years were brutalized before being raped, many being told that it was an honour to have their first intercourse with a soldier of Nippon. Compounding this debauchery, most of the ravished women and girls, prostrate and bleeding after multiple rapes, were killed.

Evidence was given before the Tokyo Tribunal by eye-witnesses, that should have made the Japanese nation squirm with shame. The accounts of abnormal and sadistic acts by the ravishing Japanese troops, and not just on women and girls, defies description and is quite unprintable though it can be said profoundly: 'If this was war "Japanese style", then God help the world.'

Another despicable example of criminal behaviour by Japanese troops was the widespread incidence of looting that became a pastime, and arson a sport. Civilians were apprehended in the street, searched, and if owning nothing of value they were shot. Thousands of houses and shops were wrecked and emptied of their contents. After looting them, the Japanese soldiers invariably set them on fire. In the Taiping Road, the main shopping centre of Nanking, block after block was destroyed by fire after being looted. Then, for no reason at all, large residential areas were set alight. More than one-third of the city was destroyed by fire.

To add to the horrors, thousands of male civilians were rounded up, bound

with their hands behind their backs and taken out of the city like cattle to the slaughter where they were then killed by machine-gun fire or by bayoneting. It is known that more than 20,000 were murdered in this atrocity alone. But these 20,000 were not the only ones to be massacred. Before the Japanese entered Nanking, large numbers of Chinese troops, totalling more than 30,000, laid down their arms and surrendered. Within 70 hours they had all been lined up in groups along the banks of the Yangtze River and slaughtered by machine-gun fire. Such was the horrific tale of the capture of the city of Nanking and the mass murder of so many of its inhabitants.

General Koiso, who twelve years later became Prime Minister of Japan, in a communication sent, shortly after this horrendous massacre, to the Japanese Vice-Minister for War, declared: 'Racial struggle between the Japanese and Chinese is to be expected . . . we must never hesitate to wield military power where necessity dictates.'

Post war deliberations and the charges brought against the Japanese military laboured the enormity of the crimes, but did not dwell on the racist or genocidal predilections of the criminals within the Japanese High Command or for that matter, members of the Japanese government. With the facts of undisputed history now fully revealed, it is clear that the Japanese practised genocide and were racially biased – an evil combination indeed, and a most likely psychological explanation, for lack of any other reason, why Japanese troops killed their victims with such a blood-lust and ferocity.

One final example of this killing mania. In the late summer of 1932, the Japanese forces, pursuing retreating Chinese forces, arrived at three towns in the vicinity of Fushun. The inhabitants were suspected of harbouring and aiding the so-called 'bandits' during their retreat. In all three towns these unfortunate civilians, among whom were women and children, were forced from their houses by Japanese troops, lined up alongside the ditches on the edge of the main road and made to kneel down. They were then machine-gunned and bayoneted to death. The number massacred exceeded 2,700 men, women and children. The General Officer Commanding the Kwantung army justified the executions as part of the 'programme of exterminating bandits'.

A few days later, in the Hsing Tai district, a platoon of Kempeitai – Japanese military police, arrested seven civilians in one of the villages who were suspected of being Chinese 'bandits'. They were tortured and starved for three days before being tied to trees and their bodies used for bayonet practice. At another village a party of soldiers who arrived raped all the women and girls, murdered

twenty-four of the inhabitants, and burned down two-thirds of the houses before they left. In the same district and on the same day, more than forty inhabitants of the village of Wang-Chia-To were executed in a psychotic killing spree by Japanese soldiers.

Such unwarranted killings and vile rapes were not the acts of honourable soldiers in the course of war. It must also be remembered that these instances of wholesale slaughter in occupied countries by Japanese troops, particularly in China, were so widespread and endured as normal conduct, that to list every single atrocity would take years. The Chinese were justified in identifying the Japanese troops as '*Nippon Taiheiyo-no-gan*, meaning - Japan, cancer of the Pacific'.

JOSEF STALIN'S REVENGE

By the summer of 1945, Japan had 5,500,000 men in its army alone, comprising 173 divisions and 104 independent brigades. With such daunting forces at its disposal, the Japanese Imperial High Command had every confidence in its capability to continue resisting the Anglo-Americans – and the Red Army too, if the USSR decided to attack its occupied territories in Korea and Manchuria.

Manpower, inexhaustible, or so it seemed, was Japan's most potent force particularly in areas of deployment, thus, when the Red Army turned its attention eastward after the defeat of Germany, Japan had a formidable military presence in Manchukuo, Inner Mongolia, Korea, parts of China, South Sakhalin and the Kurile Islands. As an occupation and defensive force it was enormous, comprising numerous infantry and cavalry divisions and several armoured brigades, disposed relevant to strategic needs, but more particularly, close to the borders of the USSR that extended for more than 3,000 miles.

However, Japan's most battleworthy troops were stationed in Korea, supported by the Kwantung Army and its allies as well as the Armies of Inner Mongolia and Manchukuo. The Kwantung Army consisted of the I, III, V, and XVII Army Groups, with two field armies in each, the independent IV Field Army, and two air armies. Logistically, this huge force of men numbering 1,038,600, was supported by 5,380 field guns, 1,175 tanks, 1,750 combat aircraft and a flotilla of warships on the Sungari river.

Well aware of Japan's almost limitless manpower and its huge army, Josef Stalin ensured that before a single shot was fired, vast amounts of men and armour would be dispatched east to provide for a complete superiority of arms and men. Along with this foresight was the knowledge that the Japanese had the reputation of being fanatical and fearless in battle. Taking no chances, Stalin ordered the transfer of considerable forces to the Far East, these included the 1st and 39th Armies from East Prussia, the 6th Guards Tank and 53rd Armies from Czechoslovakia with supporting units from the central and western USSR.

This deployment of men and equipment almost doubled the existing forces already in position on the eastern borders of the USSR.

The dispatch and re-positioning of such large forces and their equipment within a remarkably short period and over distances from 5,000 to 7,000 miles, was one of the largest military movements in history, and was facilitated not without some problems as the entire mass of troops, supplies, and equipment had to be transported via the Trans-Siberian Railway. None the less, this massive re-deployment was achieved on schedule and enabled previously planned strategy to be put into effect without delay.

In the Far East, the Soviet Union now had at its command, three air armies, eleven combined-arms armies and one tank army. Including the supply units and Front establishments, there were four Mongolian divisions, five rifle and twenty-four tank or independent mechanised brigades as well as seventy-six veteran Soviet divisions – in all, about 1,500,000 men. The Soviet Air Force was equally formidable, comprising close to 4,000 combat aircraft. Backing this huge army were 27,000 field-guns and mortars and close to 6,000 self-propelled guns and tanks.

On 8 August, fired by a desire to punish the second instigator of the world war, the USSR declared war on Japan, and two days later the Mongolian Peoples Republic followed suit. Moving on the offensive, the Soviet and Mongolian assault forces launched their attacks against the Japanese on better than equal terms.

Japanese resistance, as expected, was fierce and, from the first day of fighting, the combined Soviet force encountered an element of tenacious opposition and methods of combat never before experienced. Not only was the fighting ferocious, it was vengeful. The Japanese mounted numerous banzai charges involving hundreds of men. It mattered not that Soviet fire-power exacted an awful toll, the hordes of screaming troops just kept coming. It was a carnage that made the senses reel. Another aspect peculiar to the Japanese, was their penchant for suicide tactics so well known to the British in south-east Asia and the Americans in the Pacific. The few soldiers captured, willingly committed hara-kiri when surrounded by their captors, by the simple expedient of detonating concealed grenades, killing or wounding many of their captors, too.

Moreover, many soldiers loaded with explosives would throw themselves under Soviet tanks, welcoming death in the Emperor's name. Because of the Soviet spear-head tactics, some platoons and companies would, with the flow of battle, find themselves trapped within Japanese positions and consequently

taken prisoner. Their fate was swift and horrible. Subsequently, with Soviet advances, their tortured and mutilated bodies would be found; usually with eyes gouged out and their genitals removed. In a number of instances, a penis would be found stuffed into a dead soldier's mouth while others were found decapitated. This was not soldiering, it was barbarism.

The news of these Japanese battlefield atrocities did not frighten or deter the advancing Soviet armies, it merely hardened the resolve to rid mainland Asia of the Japanese curse, the quicker to exact retribution. The succeeding days compelled the Japanese to retreat on all fronts as the weight of Soviet armour inexorably rolled forward. Meanwhile the Japanese Government surrendered to the Allies causing uncertainty and confusion in the Kwantung Army. On 14 August a ceasefire order was issued by Staff of III Army Group without the knowledge of the High Command of the Kwantung Army, which quickly cancelled it. On the following day, General Yamada heard the Emperor's proclamation over the radio, but decided to take no action until written confirmation arrived.

On 16 August, the Kwantung Army Staff, completely unaware of the tremendous size of the advancing Soviet forces, discussed the news from Tokyo before voting by a majority to go on fighting, but on the following day, a direct order from the Emperor to the Commander-in-Chief of the Kwantung Army, General Yamada, arrived by hand, brought by a member of the Japanese Royal Family, instructing him to negotiate a surrender with the Soviet High Command. Yamada complied and, on 18 August, his Chief-of-Staff General Hata flew to Marshal Vasilevsky's headquarters where a surrender document was signed the next day.

Helped by confusion in the Japanese headquarters, but not by the lingering desire to fight, the Soviet armies continued their advance against weakening resistance with one objective in mind. This was to occupy as much territory as possible before the cease-fire was declared. Endeavouring to speed up this objective, Marshal Vasilevsky ordered experienced paratroops to land in the main cities of Manchuria, Kirin, Harbin, Mukden, Changchun and Port Arthur, ahead of the land armies and to seize airports and vital centres of communication. On 20 August, the great tank armada accompanying the huge Soviet army, having been refuelled, pushed on to Mukden, captured the city and then advanced towards Port Arthur, which was occupied on 22 August.

On 23 August 1945, Stalin issued an Order of the Day to mark the triumph of Soviet forces over the Japanese, and this date witnessed the end of the Far

East campaign. Subsequently, Soviet marshals and generals held victory parades in Harbin, Mukden, and Khabarovsk, but nowhere with greater satisfaction and pride than in the military-naval base of Port Arthur, which a previous Imperial Russian garrison had been forced to surrender to the Japanese in 1905 after the surprise attack and destruction of the Russian Pacific Fleet in 1904 by a unit of the Imperial Japanese Navy. Stalin himself, when discussing the reoccupation of areas lost to Japan's war of aggression in 1904/5, mentioned the settling of a long-standing account with the Japanese that he took particular pleasure in.

Finally, there was the matter of prisoners of war. Unlike the American and British politicians, who agreed to repatriate Japanese prisoners of war, Stalin had other ideas. Vengeance dictated his decision and orders to take the whole of the Kwantung Army as prisoners on a permanent basis. He could certainly not be called magnanimous in victory as history records. Though no stranger to dark deeds himself, Stalin justified the permanent incarceration of Japanese prisoners of war because of Japan's long history of bloody aggression and its many bestial atrocities. One wonders if the discovery of so many mutilated Soviet soldiers and the atrocities performed on them, had reached his ears. If so, it would surely have hardened his attitude and strengthened his resolve for vengeance.

The task of rounding up, disarming, and transporting hundreds of thousands of Japanese soldiers took many months to complete. Stalin's intentions were plain. The whole of the Kwantung Army, without exception, was to be used on forced labour projects in the Soviet Far East and in Siberia. Japan protested, but was in no position to defy the might of the USSR, besides, as Stalin dryly observed, 'The hordes of Nippon, were no strangers at compelling their prisoners to work at slave labour when it controlled the Pacific and south-east Asia.'

The Soviet Union officially claimed that 83,737 Japanese troops had been killed during their 24 day campaign – an inordinately high casualty rate given the circumstances. But, to support this figure, the Soviet authorities referred to waves of suicidal attacks numbering thousands of men who deliberately charged into unassailable and concentrated gun fire. In light of Allied experience in the Pacific and south-east Asia, this contention as an explanation, could not seriously be challenged. The banzai charges were well-known.

None the less, according to figures supplied by the USSR, 594,000 Japanese were disarmed and taken prisoner, including 148 generals. Soviet losses were given at slightly more than 8,000 men killed, and 22,000 wounded. Japanese

forces captured by Allies at war's end, were extremely fortunate to be able to surrender to a more compassionate enemy – despite their horrific misdeeds. Equally true is the contention that, had not Emperor Hirohito made a twelfth-hour appeal for all Japanese Armed Forces to lay down their arms, then suicides of a most dramatic nature, would have occurred both within Japan and without.

To the Japanese, surrender was considered an intolerable dishonour, and to drive this point home, thousands of Allied servicemen and civilians who were unfortunate enough to be captured, were contemptuously reminded by their Japanese captors that their spirits would have attained great honour if rather, they had been killed in battle. Only because of the Emperor's 'benevolence', they were told, were prisoners of the Japanese allowed to live as 'dishonoured number ten citizens'.

This extremist contempt by the Japanese was put to the test when the might of the Soviet Army – equal in arms and numbers, attacked a vast Japanese Army in Northern China and Manchuria. An entire Japanese Army surrendered to the Armed Forces of the USSR and wisely so as had not their own Emperor surrendered too? So much for Japanese invincibility and their scornful boast that they would rather die with honour than surrender.

The surrender and capture of the largest alien army on foreign soil in the history of the world, numbering nearly 600,000 Japanese officers and men, occurred as if by a quixotic twist of fate, on banzai-screaming troops who, previously, exulted in victories as the all-conquering Sons of Heaven where their sheer over-powering numbers removed any thoughts of defeat and surrender. Of course, they could afford to be boastful until finally, they did choose surrender rather than commit *hara-kiri*.

The Whys and Wherefores

Nowhere in Japan's war of conquest did it have such a concentration of men and field-armies as in north-east Asia. China in particular, was well garrisoned where the Japanese had gained ascendancy, but like the collapse of the Northern Kwantung Army, the Japanese garrisons in China were initially thrown into confusion after their Emperor's Peace Proclamation. The Communist led Peoples Liberation Army, headed by Mao Tse Tung and Chou En Lai, did effect the capture of thousands of despairing Japanese troops as did the forces of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek, China's legitimate ruler.

Understandably, senior Japanese officers stationed in China, had the unenviable

task of surrendering regiments of crack troops to local partisan or government forces or, trying to break out with their commands intact in an attempt to surrender to representatives of the Allied Powers. This latter preference no doubt, being motivated by the knowledge that good treatment could be depended upon as against the certainty that if compelled to surrender to the Chinese, vengeful retribution for many past atrocities, might be exacted. In this latter concern, they were not wrong.

The Chinese had suffered terribly at the hands of the Japanese for many years, and had endured every barbarity known to mankind. These included thousands of beheadings, hundreds of thousands of rapes, looting, torture, bayoneting, tens of thousands of murders, arson and destruction almost beyond comprehension. It is remarkable upon reflection, that by comparison with China's huge but peaceful population, the Japanese occupation of conquered territory was achieved with such a relatively small military presence. The reason is – and this applies to every area of Japanese conquest, not just China, that terror and barbarity coupled with constant beheadings, had a way of subduing any real opposition. Murders were committed just as nonchalantly as eating a bowl of rice. It seemed that the Japanese troops had no soul or conscience, so unspeakably primitive and merciless were their actions.

Needless to say, there were indeed acts of vengeance against some Japanese that the circumstances of the time could not prevent. At Hankow in north-east China, the bodies of twenty-six Japanese soldiers were found in a field. Four were tied to posts and had been shot through the back of the head. Four had been decapitated. Four had their arms and legs crudely amputated. Four were found minus hands and feet and had their own genitals stuffed into their mouths. The remaining ten were found bayoneted to death as well as having their eyes gouged out. This act of vengeance was discovered on the 19 August, four days after hostilities had officially ceased. It is noteworthy that the manner of these executions was similar to that of the Japanese. For the unfortunate twenty-six men, their own past methods of execution of Chinese civilians had been copied.

Historians will not dispute the fact that, had China been a united country and combined the forces of the Peoples Liberation Army with the Nationalist Army, Japan could well have had an almighty battle on its hands. There was much more manpower in China. United and properly trained, it is conceivable that Japanese forces could have not only been contained, but forced to withdraw from a lot of its occupied territories if such a combined Chinese Army had

waged a properly conducted and systematic offensive against them. But it was not to be.

Only a portion of the Chinese Nationalist Army was engaged in defending China from Japanese aggression because, Chiang Kai-shek had the other half of the Nationalist Army uselessly engaged in blocking off the declared Chinese communist areas of central and western China – where the Peoples Liberation Army virtually ruled. As history records, both Mao Tse Tung and Chiang Kai-shek, were self-seeking and strong-willed adversaries whose political aspirations transcended the partial occupation of China by aggressive Japanese armies. It is more than probable that both of them were counting on Canada, New Zealand, the United States and Australia, ultimately to defeat Japan, thus helping them resolve what would certainly turn into civil war – as afterwards indeed it did.

It is not intended to dwell at length on China's participation in the war, because in each succeeding part of this book, as in this part, there is much to relate and many questions that demand answers. Almost fifty years have passed since the end of the Second World War and with the passage of time, not only have memories dimmed, but many of those who took part in defending their homes and countries from Japanese aggression, have since passed on. Notwithstanding, it remains imperative to investigate and challenge glaring injustices and acts of political expediency that no amount of suppression can hope to contain forever.

When Emperor Hirohito issued his Peace Proclamation, the armed forces of Japan, particularly in the field, were stunned. Never had the Emperor intervened so directly. The wars, over a long period, had been fought in his name and virtually to the death. Many countries had been liberated from the yoke of European Imperialism and independence movements installed in their place. That they were puppet regimes beholden to Japan, was infinitely preferable to European domination. Asia for the Asians was the catch-cry, supported by the Asia Co-prosperity Scheme – a palpable lie, but believable propaganda.

The glorious victories, the sheer power of the Japanese armies, the countries conquered or partially occupied, everything had been carried out to the glory of the Emperor's person, but now? What devilish plot had induced the Imperial Son of Heaven to break his silence and confound his subjects? The Imperial Proclamation, when it came, was an exercise in semantics and verbal polemics. Not once was the word surrender mentioned. The following is an extract transcript of the Emperor's broadcast.

After pondering deeply the general trends of the world and the actual conditions obtaining in Our Empire today, We have decided to effect a settlement of the present situation by resorting to an extraordinary measure. We have ordered Our government to communicate to the Governments of the United States, Great Britain, China and the Soviet Union that Our Empire accepts the provision of the Joint Declaration. The enemy had begun to employ a new and most cruel bomb, the power of which to do damage is indeed incalculable, taking a toll of many innocent lives. Should we continue to fight, it would not only result in an ultimate collapse and obliteration of the Japanese nation, but also it would lead to the total extinction of human civilisation. All Japanese, must strictly beware of any 'outbursts of emotion' that might engender 'needless complications'. They must not fall prey to 'any fraternal contention and strife' that might create 'confusion', lead them 'astray', or cause them 'to lose the confidence of the world'.

The emotions of the moment, the surreptitious and condescending style of the speech, the veiled nuances and subtle references obscured the simple fact that the Emperor had announced capitulation to the Potsdam Declaration – an ultimatum – in which the Allied Powers had demanded 'the unconditional surrender of all Japanese armed forces'. In this broadcast great care had been taken not to offend the armed forces, the terrorists or the fanatics. Conducive to the verbal polemics, a masterpiece of adroit English, equal care was taken to make the nation believe that Japan was terminating the war by its own volition and only because strategic considerations were no longer in its favour. A further inference, designed to convince the Emperor's faithful subjects was the fact that Japan, by its own selfless act, was saving the rest of the world from total extinction. This was clever but totally devious and untrue. It was with such manipulative semantics, that complete loss of face, an important consideration in Asia, was avoided.

Many of the Emperor's subjects were torn with grief and despair at their country's collapse. Some vented their feeling in violence, while others committed *hara-kiri* by ritually disembowelling themselves. Many others wept in silence as their dreams of glory evaporated at the conclusion of the Imperial Message. More still, and with heavy hearts, trudged along fire-ravaged streets to contemplate Japan's uncertain future at local shrines while lamenting their dead. In Tokyo, thousands flocked to the Imperial Palace Plaza to bow in the

direction of their Divine Emperor by whose Imperial Command, peace had been granted to the world – such was their thinking. While tearfully singing their national anthem and amidst shouts of 'Banzai!', other gathered at the revered precincts of the Yasukuni Jinja to commune with and pray to, the spirits of Japan's warrior dead.

With the passage of nearly fifty years, we should examine the structure of the Japanese High Command as it applied from as far back as 1904 and, too, the succeeding Governments of the day. To commence with, it would be futile to suggest that the Emperor, who had succeeded to the Throne in 1925, was unaware of his country's war of aggression in north-east Asia, particularly in the 1930s. On a number of occasions, mounted on a white horse, and in full ceremonial military uniform he would review Japan's expanding army while acknowledging frenzied shouts of 'Banzai!'. As a God-Emperor, and regarded as being Divine, Japan's expansion on the mainland including Manchuria, China and Korea, could not have gone unnoticed. His attendance at military reviews, signalled if not his complicity, then willing acquiescence to Japan's military ambition.

Then there was the concern of frequently changing cabinets in unstable governments and the removal of Prime Ministers either by pressure or assassination. All of these events would have been known to His Imperial Majesty, being the most powerful and privileged person in the land. His Imperial pleasure and commands were treated as God-like and sacrosanct.

Thus, it would be naive and fallacious to presume that Emperor Hirohito was totally ignorant about Japan's expansionist wars of aggression and furthermore, that he was unaware that with territorial conquest there would inevitably, be a great loss of life. It must also be remembered that every act of aggression was done in his name. He would have been aware of that too.

Specifically, and as just one instance, the infamous Rape of Nanking should be recalled. This vicious atrocity carried out by Japanese troops in the 1930s, earned public condemnation because the whole world knew about the barbaric excesses of the conquering hordes. Nanking was further proof, if any more was needed, that a blood-lusting monster was on the rampage. Even Hirohito, must have known about Nanking. He could have expressed Imperial displeasure at the shame such conduct brought upon Japan, and seen to it that such barbarity ceased. But he didn't. The question has to be asked, why not?

To employ an Americanism, 'He was either for, or agin' 'em.' History suggests a subtle compliance and accord by the Emperor with Japan's warlike

ambitions. And why not? Japan was powerful and succeeding beyond its wildest dreams. Manchuria was occupied and subject to Japanese rule, so too was Korea. Even China was crumbling before the might of Japan's armed forces. Hirohito must have known such affairs of State, but did little or nothing to amend matters.

Certain it is that, the reign of Emperor Hirohito will go down in recorded annals as the bloodiest in the history of Japan. Thus, it is not unreasonable to hypothesize and validate an issue as contentious as this, particularly when towards the end of the war, after things began to go badly, Hirohito, seeing the writing on the wall, was only too willing to exercise his Imperial authority to influence his ministers – which he did, to call an end to the war. But of more grave concern was the possibility that if Japan was defeated and lost all its conquests, so too might he lose his Throne.

As being a God-Emperor, Hirohito was revered like no other monarch of the times. He enjoyed the absolute servility and obedience of his subjects and reigned with the supreme advantage of being accepted as a God. In the eyes of his subjects, from the mighty to the lowly, he was Divine and all powerful and endowed with a wisdom beyond challenge. But though considered a true Son of Heaven, he was a mere mortal man. One sometimes wonders, if he ever questioned his own supposed Divinity, particularly when, with Germany defeated, the future for Japan looked decidedly grim.

Sharing the Emperor's concern for the future was Prince Fumimaro Konoye who had headed three Cabinets before Pearl Harbour. It was during 1942 and 1943, that Konoye, whose prestige ranked second only to that of the Imperial Family, first mentioned his worry that a protracted war ending in defeat might precipitate a Communist revolution within Japan. This was a warning that Konoye repeated on at least two other occasions of significance; during the selection of a Premier to succeed General Hideko Tojo in July 1944 and during an extraordinary audience with the Emperor in February 1945. Among affairs of State discussed and of equal importance, was the knowledge that Hitler's Germany was doomed and that following its certain defeat, the whole might of the Allied Powers would be turned against Japan.

Hirohito was not only apprised of Japan's war situation by Konoye, there were other influential advisors who though once confident of Japan's certain and sustainable conquests, now echoed growing concern at the possibility of Japan being invaded, if not before, then certainly after Germany's defeat. Thus it was that the fate of Kaiser Wilhelm at the end of the First World War, must

have been sombrely reviewed with some trepidation within the confines of the Imperial chambers along with the possibility of a Communist revolution. Perhaps and just as sombrely, the fate of the Russian Imperial Family as well as the Czar, could well have been avoided as being a distasteful subject. However, had the Emperor only known, his place in the future of Japan was assured for two specific reasons of which neither had anything to do with his innocence or guilt. This will be referred to later.

Clearly, if the war was to end with honour, then time was running out. A negotiated peace was infinitely preferable to unconditional surrender, but the prevarication and reluctance of some members of the Cabinet and the Military on the question of surrender, remained as an impediment to meaningful progress.

In an enlightening résumé of his own inadequacies as a pre-war Premier, Konoye admitted that he had failed to perceive the real intentions concealed behind the arguments of the extremist elements within the Armed Forces – those responsible for the 'Manchurian and China Incidents' and for the subsequent Greater East Asia War. These extremists had to be eliminated, Konoye said, if the Empire was to be saved from Communism.

The Prince had identified the enigma accurately. From an objective point of view, the Japanese military had indeed lost the war, but perversely they were determined to continue fighting even if the conflict descended to a war of attrition. The leaders of the Armed Forces believed that by recalling and positioning Japan's vast army in the homeland, such an awesome reserve of fighting men, backed up by a fresh number of conscripts as a reserve and even larger force, would give cause for intending invaders to hesitate at the certainty of heavy and appalling casualties. The Army and Navy believed that such a concentration of forces in the Homeland – backed by tens of millions of the Emperor's subjects, would inflict so much damage and loss of life to the invaders, that a truce preliminary to a negotiated peace appeared obtainable on favourable terms. This die-hard mentality and projection became the dogmatic strategy of the militarists when countering the concerns of civilians who were enduring catastrophic air-raids and who could sense inevitable defeat.

It was at this point that the Emperor summoned senior statesmen to the Palace. He could see that matters were going from bad to worse and that the Cabinet needed a new leader to try to negotiate a cessation of hostilities with the Allies. Following serious discussion it was agreed that a highly regarded Admiral, 79-year-old Baron Kantaro Suzuki, be nominated to the Premiership.

It was hoped that Suzuki could be persuaded to proceed with peace negotiations despite the fact that the Imperial Mandate to form a Cabinet did not contain any order or reference to that effect, though it was Suzuki's understanding however, that His Majesty wanted a return to peace, sooner rather than later. Hirohito, for once in his reign, was beginning to exercise the Royal prerogative to inhibit the mindless pursuit of continuing warfare by the militarists.

Had the Emperor used this Imperial power earlier in his reign, and he could have, indeed should have, millions of lives would have been saved. It is an undeniable fact which does no credit to Hirohito that, in the preceding years, when Japanese forces were ravaging Asia and the Pacific in victorious and conquering hordes, he did nothing other than occasionally to review the troops. His silence must be taken as consent. Paradoxically, only when certain defeat was looming, did Hirohito decided to intervene. Besides, there was a Republican America and a Communist Soviet Union to think about. Royal families were not exactly on their agenda and as the prolonged war had been waged in the Emperor's name, the foreseeable stability of the Throne looked decidedly shaky.

Japan was neither diplomatically nor psychologically conditioned to enter meaningful discussions that might pave the way for an armistice precursory to peace talks. Such a proposition if carried into effect and though hastening the end of the war, would, with its aftermath, create an untenable situation in so far as the exposé of war crimes was concerned. The militarists above all, had a lot to hide. Thus, the proposition and determination for a massive last-ditch resistance in the Japanese homeland found much favour.

Hirohito could not help but be aware of the division wracking the civilian Cabinet and the Military, but fully aware of the Potsdam Declaration and uncertain about the Imperial Family's future he began to enlist the support and advice of highly respected notables to determine the 'American Attitude'. Meanwhile in Washington, the American Government remained steadfast in its resolve to adhere to the terms of the Potsdam Declaration and did not feel any compelling reason to modify Allied demands for 'unconditional surrender', except to reiterate that this phrase specifically meant the capitulation of Japan's armed forces. No mention was made about the end of Japan's existence as a sovereign nation, nor was any reference made about the critical issue of Allied intentions with regard to the future of the Imperial Dynasty.

On 12 July 1945, in compliance with the Emperor's known wishes, Foreign Minister Togo instructed the Japanese Ambassador in Moscow to inform the

Soviet Government that the Emperor wanted the war ended immediately and wished to dispatch Prince Konoye as a special envoy to the Soviet Union. Konoye would carry a personal letter from the Emperor and would be empowered to discuss matters pertaining to Soviet-Japanese relations, especially the Manchurian question. Behind this increasing involvement of the Emperor, was the knowledge that army planners in Tokyo had resolved that Japan must fight to the bitter end. It was because of this unpalatable news that the Emperor had dramatically summoned the Supreme Council to the Palace. In sombre tone, His Majesty declared that despite the determination to fight to the end, it was now a compelling consideration to find other resolutions capable of dealing with the crisis concerning the Kremlin directly.

Unbeknown to the Japanese nation, the conclusion of the war was close at hand. All the scheming and planning that was going on behind closed doors, both by the militarists and the peace-planners, did not take into account a weapon of such awesome power, that it would compel a hasty surrender and obviate the need by the Allied Powers to invade Japan scheduled for 1 November 1945. Meanwhile, American bombers were daily taking a heavy toll. The United States Air Force ruled the skies over Japan and had so thorough a command of the air that leaflets were dropped over Japanese cities warning them that they might be the next to be bombed - a psychological weapon of considerable portent. It was believed by some that these leaflets warned Japanese citizens of impending atomic destruction, but this was not so. Even the Potsdam Declaration did not mention that the United States possessed a bomb that could explode with the force of 20,000 tons of TNT. The citizens were merely warned that they faced prompt and complete destruction - meaning more of the incendiary raids that, previously, had burned one city after another with a terrible and devastating fury.

Ultimately, with a split-second suddenness, an atomic bomb exploded over the city of Hiroshima on 6 August 1945. Three days later a second bomb exploded over Nagasaki - the same day, 9 August, that the USSR commenced hostilities against Japan. These catastrophic events resulted in frantic activity within the Japanese Government, but national unity remained elusive. Factions for and against the war remained divided though consensus was unanimous on the safe-guarding and preserving of the Imperial Institution. Through all this, Premier Suzuki vacillated, listening to one argument then heeding another, but finally, it was agreed to seek an extraordinary Imperial

Conference in an air raid shelter within the Palace grounds shortly before midnight on 9 August.

The Emperor attended as was expected and helped to persuade a dead-locked Cabinet on the proper courses to adopt. This indication of His Majesty's wishes broke the political impasse. Once again, but only with defeat staring Japan in the face, did the Emperor emphasize his wishes. Accordingly, the Japanese Cabinet unanimously approved His Majesty's 'wise counsel' and proceeded to implement the Imperial Will.

By early morning on 10 August 1945, Japan's willingness to surrender was cabled to its diplomatic representatives in Berne and Stockholm, to be conveyed to Chungking, Moscow, London and Washington. The Japanese communication was answered by Secretary of State Byrnes that same day, but provoked a new controversy within the Japanese Government.

The note from the American Secretary of State revealed that the Emperor would be 'subject to' the Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers and that the new form of Government in Japan would be created 'by the freely expressed will of the Japanese people'. Predictably, fierce arguments challenging these stipulations broke out. The resentment at having to swallow the bitter pill of defeat was bad enough, but the condition that the Emperor would be 'subject to a Supreme Commander', rankled.

Another Imperial conference was held on the morning of 14 August. As he had done at the previous conference, His Majesty once again contributed his opinions that were taken by those present as being not only the wishes of the Emperor, but Imperial Decrees that accepted the stipulations from Washington. The Cabinet quickly endorsed the Emperor's 'bold decision', subsequently dispatching cables to Sweden and Switzerland. But this time their messages were final and not dissenting. Following this acceptance of the Potsdam Declaration, the Cabinet quickly drafted an Imperial Rescript for the Emperor to broadcast to the nation, calling upon the people to respond with loyalty and sincerity to His Majesty's commands. It was this rescript that the Emperor personally recorded on the night of 14 August for broadcasting by transcription the next day at noon.

However, during the course of that night, a group of fanatical officers entered the Palace grounds with the aim of winning over the Imperial Guards Division. When the commanding general resisted the officers' overtures, one of them produced a pistol and killed him without compunction. Then, using the dead general's special seal, the mutinous officers forged several orders, giving them

control of the Palace Guard. They then spent the rest of the night searching for the record that the Emperor had cut just hours before while other officers searched everywhere, looking for Marquis Kido and other presumed 'traitors' close to the Throne who had 'misled' the Emperor into seeking peace with the enemy. Fortunately for the Japanese nation, the attempted *coup* failed. By the morning of 15 August, the officers had been arrested and order restored.

Following the Emperor's broadcast to the nation, not unexpectedly, a wave of suicides swept the land. Burdened by the thought of surrender, War Minister Anami took his life in the traditional manner. Countless others committed hara-kiri for much the same reason, though some there were, who had committed revolting atrocities while posted overseas. For them, surrender meant that, inevitably, they would be called to account and would surely be punished by hanging. Hara-kiri was preferable in the comforting knowledge that to take one's own life was more honourable than to be hanged as a common war criminal, but for the most part, acceptance and obedience to the Imperial Will followed the Emperor's broadcast to the nation.

The Emperor of Japan, when the occasion demanded, had more power and influence than he was given credit for. No one, but no one, dared defy Emperor Hirohito. Not only did he enjoy all the trappings of Imperial power, but equally if not more noteworthy, he enjoyed the mystical exalted status of divinity, identifying him as a God-Emperor. He had the power and unchallengeable authority to decree anything. Had he been a more democratic monarch and used his Imperial Will more studiously, he was a well educated man, the horrors of Japanese aggression, could never have succeeded.

It is true that Hirohito was a constitutional monarch but, during the 1930s, with his education and background, he should have expressed Imperial displeasure at the militarism of the Army, and condemned the invasion of peaceful countries. His silence was sufficient encouragement for the militarists to ride rough-shod over civilian administrators, Government officials and even the Cabinet itself. The best that can be said for Hirohito is, that only when Japan faced cataclysmic defeat, did he exercise his Imperial authority. And the worst - while Japan wreaked death and destruction, that he ruled over the most hated, feared, despised, and morally barren nation in the world.

CANNIBALISM: THE STARK TRUTH

The eating of human flesh – deliberately – was initially disbelieved by the Allied Authorities. So unthinkable and barbaric was such a practice that not even the Japanese could stoop to this form of atrocity. Such was the Allied thinking. But as evidence will show, cannibalism, vivisection and mutilation of Allied servicemen, particularly pilots of downed aircraft and Australian soldiers, was an all too common occurrence. It will, doubtless, astonish many to learn that vivisection was performed by Japanese army doctors. Dissections, too, were performed and human liver was a much sought after delicacy. The direction to eat the bodies of prisoners was the subject of more than one Army Order.

Evidence abounds, especially in New Guinea, of this callous and uncivilized practice that involved the roasting of flesh after heads, fingers and toenails had been removed and cadavers disembowelled. Not only the dead but the living, met with this disgraceful atrocity. The following are examples.

A young American pilot in perfect health was forced to parachute from his aircraft after its propeller was blown off by gun fire. Upon touching ground he was seized and immediately beheaded, then his body was stripped, his genitalia removed and quickly prepared for roasting. His liver was reserved for senior Japanese officers along with slabs of flesh from his thighs. The rest of this unfortunate pilot's body was roasted separately, with the intention of feeding the squad of soldiers who had executed him. As his body began slowly to cook over specially prepared glowing embers and skewered on spits like a freshly caught wild animal, it was difficult perhaps to imagine that less than an hour before he was flying across the skies unaware of the fate awaiting him.

On another occasion and in the same area, an Australian soldier, no more than twenty, was tied to a tree upside down with his head two feet from the

ground. A native eye-witness peering from the safety of the jungle describes what followed.

The soldier had been stripped and his naked body looked strangely white. He had no wounds and looked quite muscular. I saw an officer reach towards his neck. Something small but shiny glinted in his hand (presumably a scalpel). Then I saw a lot of blood splashing onto the ground as the prisoner wriggled violently within his bonds. I watched horrified as the officer stepped back. He was talking to a small number of Japanese soldiers as though he was lecturing them. Within a couple of minutes the body had ceased to struggle and the blood stopped spurting. Then the officer stepped forward once more, cut open the prisoner's chest and part of the abdomen before removing his heart and liver. I felt very upset and frightened and stole away into the jungle.

Analysis of this atrocity suggests that the officer may have been an army doctor taking the opportunity to show medical orderlies the correct procedure of dissection. The body being deliberately drained of blood suggests that it was destined for a special occasion – cannibalism.

The following entry in the diary of a dead Japanese officer is irrefutable and conclusive proof that many captured Australian soldiers were systematically butchered and eaten.

My first experience of eating the enemy was an enlightening event. Eleven dead soldiers were 'prepared' and taken to the fires trussed and skewered like swine. Their empty abdomens were filled with spiced rice and the skin flaps sewn with fine wire. Four live prisoners were beheaded and dissected by Captain Kodo. Their bodies were also cooked. I watched as their livers were taken out by the doctor (Captain Kodo). The ordinary soldiers then removed all the internal organs before filling the cavities with rice and jungle fruits. It was the first time I was able to see first-hand the entrails of a human being. It was most educational.

One of the more common atrocities committed by the Japanese was the cruel and despicable act of removing genitalia from living prisoners. Invariably they were tied to posts or trees, many of them in sound health. With perverse sadism the Japanese would castrate their victims and slice off the penis – often completing this barbarous act by shoving the screaming victim's penis into his mouth. Through massive loss of blood, unconsciousness would ensue followed

inevitably by death, but not before spells of consciousness returned and with it, agonies of an indescribable nature. This was a much favoured method of torture because it produced the most pain and of course, a most excruciating death.

Finally, but not because these gruesome atrocities were rare, but in deference to readers sensibilities, one more example of genocidal mania will suffice. At Balikpapan, Borneo, part of the Netherlands East Indies, a captured district officer and a police inspector, both in uniform, were being interrogated by a Japanese Army officer. During the interview both European officers were continually assaulted. Enraged at the scarce information these two brave men supplied, the officer, a member of the Kempetai, drew his sword and in a blind fury, hacked off the district officer's arms just below the elbows, and then both his legs above the knees. The trunk of his unconscious body was then bound to a mango tree and bayoneted until he was dead. Then, the Netherlands policeman had his arms and legs chopped off in a similar way, but still conscious he managed to struggle on to the stumps of his legs before defiantly shouting 'God save the Queen!' He then collapsed, a bayonet thrust ending his life.

Regrettably, and because this brief portion of the book deals with cannibalism and its authenticity, a final example cannot be omitted as it refutes Japanese denials because it too was witnessed. During mid-November 1944, Havildar Chandgi Ram, formerly of the Indian Army, was digging trenches for the Japanese in the Totabil district of New Britain. About 1500 hours a single-engine American aircraft made a forced landing and came to rest a few yards from where he was working. The Japanese rushed from the nearby Go Butai Kendebo military camp and seized the pilot who looked very young. Barely had he time to scramble from his plane before he was captured.

Within half an hour of the forced landing, the Kempetai beheaded the luckless airman. Havildar Chandgi Ram, watched horrified as after the summary execution, the Japanese cut flesh from the dead pilot's arms, legs, buttocks and hips before carrying off the fresh meat to their quarters. Shocked at such barbarity, he discreetly followed the Japanese, intrigued at what they intended to do with the flesh. He observed the selected parts being cut into small pieces before being placed in woks and fried. In the evening, a Japanese major-general addressed a gathering of junior officers. At the conclusion of his speech smoking woks were brought in and the general, along with his officers, ate the spiced and seasoned meat that was offered.

If the above unpalatable evidence seems unbelievable, then the text of documentation unearthed, supported by an admission made by Major Matoba

who was interrogated about the practice of cannibalism, should convince. This reprehensible practice was clearly revealed by a military commission convened in August 1946, by the United States Navy Commander of Guam and the Marianna Islands.

ORDER REGARDING EATING FLESH OF AMERICAN FLYERS

1. The battalion desires to eat the flesh of the American aviator, Lieutenant (Junior Grade) Hall.
2. First Lieutenant Kanamuri will see to the rationing of this flesh.
3. Cadet Sakabe (Medical Corps) will attend the execution and have the liver and gall bladder removed.

Battalion Commander: Major Matoba.

Date: 9th March, 1945

Time: 9.00 a.m.

Place of execution: Mikazuki Hill Headquarters. Method of issuing orders: Called to my presence First Lieutenant Kanamuri and Cadet Sakabe and gave verbal order.

Place to report after completion of order: Brigade Commander: Major-General Tachibana. (Also informed) Divisional HQ Detachment, Major Horie, 308 Independent Infantry Battalion.

The above evidence confirming cannibalism and on quite a large scale was, with previous knowledge, supported by an Australian major-general, a New Zealand colonel and a brigadier-general of the United States Army.

It is futile for the Government of Japan to continue concealing 'unfortunate incidents' with innocuous prose.

SINGAPORE: THE ISLAND OF GENOCIDE

Terrible slaughter, the like of which exceeded the merciless conquests of Kublai Khan in medieval times, afflicted Singapore upon the arrival of the Japanese. No one could read with dispassionate indifference, the account of misery, suffering and death that occurred in this distressed land following its occupation by blood-thirsty Japanese troops, without feeling a natural revulsion.

Mercy was as alien to the conquerors from the land of the Rising Sun as would be an iceberg floating in the Red Sea. The unwarranted massacres in Singapore have become known collectively as 'the Chinese Massacres' that terrified the peaceful population and which exacted a dreadful toll. It is estimated that between nine and twelve thousand Chinese perished.

The first sequence of massacres took place after a strong detachment of Kempetai with supporting troops seized the Tanjong Pagar Police Station. There, the officer in command of the military police, Lieutenant Hisamatsu, established his headquarters following which, he issued orders that all Chinese residents in the district be assembled at three designated areas. The Harbour Board coolie lines, Tiong Bahru and the junction of the Cantonment and Neil Roads.

Then followed interrogation of the Chinese by experts – the Kempetai. After names and addresses were extracted, the unfortunate citizens were compelled to hand over their personal belongings pocket and wrist-watches, rings, jewellery and money. Then in separate but large numbers, hundreds of Chinese were forced on to army lorries – captured British ones, and driven away to Tanjong Pagar Wharf to be beheaded. So great were the numbers, this continued for twelve successive days. Scores of headless bodies were subsequently seen on the Yacht Club beach. During the interrogations that took days to conclude, boats were noticed every day arriving from Singapore Harbour with even more

arrested Chinese – they had been interrogated elsewhere. When the launches, some of them towing barges crammed with Chinese, reached an area about a mile from Balkan Mati Island, the Chinese, all of them, were pushed or kicked into the sea and then shot by their Japanese guards. Almost 200 bodies – just a fraction of the total number slaughtered, were eventually washed ashore on the island, some of them still wearing insignia proclaiming their former status as Harbour Board employees.

The details of this atrocity were given in evidence at the Chinese Massacre trial by two inspectors of the Malayan Police Force, Arthur John and Thomas Isaac, who were stationed at the Tanjong Police Station during the period of the massacres.

Massacres of Chinese civilians became so commonplace, that the Chinese community – which was large, mostly believed that it was an extermination campaign of their race by the Japanese. So numerous and pitiless were the continuing slaughters that space prevents the chronicling of every single instance. However, two slaughters must be related because of the nefarious background accompanying these killings. Those who had been murdered were not only robbed beforehand, but their addresses were searched by the Kempetai and property, mostly valuables, jewellery and hoards of money seized – much of it in foreign banknotes. One can only guess at the amount of gold and currency that fell into Japanese hands by these methods.

The following is a graphic eyewitness account that was given by Khoo Ah Ling at the Chinese Massacre trial. This witness was ordered by the Kempetai to accompany hundreds of Chinese from the Geylong district and to report to the Teluk Kuran English school for 'interrogation'.

Crammed into the school grounds, 3,600 Chinese, ranging from sixteen years of age to sixty, were systematically processed and interrogated by the Kempetai. At the beginning, all those who owned property or wealth valued at \$50,000 or upwards were told to raise their hands. Those who did, and there were scores of them, were taken to one side and escorted to an adjacent field. The next categories to be targeted were the schoolteachers, the Hainanese, and those who had been in Malaya for less than five years. These latter citizens were separated as well and confined within the school buildings. Khoo Ah Ling was not sure of the exact number who were locked up in the school with him, but there was not less than 200.

On the following day all of the occupants confined within the school were taken out and ordered to climb aboard army trucks which then drove to the

seven and a half milestone on the Siglap Road. The victims were then ordered to leave the lorries and were swiftly tied one to the other and urged to walk up a slope from the road. Those who hesitated with fear, were goaded on with jabbing bayonets. Reaching the crest of the hill, Ah Ling managed to slip his bonds and dashed towards the nearby jungle. Shots were fired but no one pursued him.

Every Chinese person at the Teluk Kuran English School, including the teachers, perished within three days, some by shooting, others by bayoneting – and the wealthy, by beheading. There were countless other slaughters by the Japanese, but the final one recorded in this narrative would have to be the most grisly and bizarre. Seven hundred Chinese were rounded up on suspicion of aiding China against Japan with considerable financial assistance. Following usual Kempetai procedures, they were first robbed and their houses plundered. Then, they were taken in lorries to an area east of Changi where a detachment of troops armed with samurai swords, proceeded to murder them in a methodical but bloodthirsty manner. An eyewitness, an elderly vegetable gardener, was confounded at the hundreds being decapitated and wondered why shooting, which would have been less exhausting and more merciful, wasn't carried out.

Even more confusing was the fact that mass graves – already dug, were being filled with headless bodies, but the heads were being gathered up and thrown on the back of a lorry that had remained behind. The following day, throughout the city of Singapore shocked civilians were horrified to see human heads mounted on the tips of long stakes everywhere. Flies gorged on the grisly reminders of Japanese 'benevolence', while juices from within the skulls dripped to the ground under the hot equatorial sun. If the intention of the Japanese was to instil fear and terror into the population, then this murderous barbarity did just that.

This 'Incident' by far the most heinous – though difficult indeed it is to distinguish war crimes where murder is, after all, murder, no matter the method, was the most frightening mainly because the horrifying aftermath was visible for all to see. Looking back on this atrocity and all the others that occurred in Singapore, the only parallel comparable in unmitigated murderous violence would have to be Nanking, but then the comparison does not stop there. The civilians butchered in both cities were the same race ethnically. They were all Chinese.

In March 1947, the Japanese commanding general of Singapore, Lieutenant-

General Nishimura, along with Major-General Kawamura and five other Japanese officers was tried by a British Military Court on charges of being involved in the massacre of several thousand Chinese civilian residents of Singapore between 18 February and 3 March 1942. Of the officers convicted, Major-General Kawamura and one officer were sentenced to death and the remainder to imprisonment.

The Andaman Islands Atrocities

The Andaman Islands, little known to the outside world, nestling between the Bay of Bengal and the Indian Ocean, were a haven of peace and tranquillity – until the Japanese invaded them. Here, two despicable acts of savagery occurred that took the lives of hundreds of men, woman and children. Though there were other needless killings in this Island group that would climb to thousands, the last act of slaughter was the one best remembered.

One month before Japan was defeated – Germany had already surrendered, the food shortages in the Islands was causing concern. At a conference held at the Naval headquarters on Andaman Island, a decision was made to transport to Havelock Island, uninhabited and jungle covered and off the north-east coast of South Andaman, a number of 'useless mouths'. They were chosen from those who, owing to their not being employed by the Japanese, had no ration cards. They included a large number of elderly and infirm, many women and children, and a few males of no fixed abode.

Those selected were first deprived of all personal possessions including household goods before being embarked on three ships. As the ships neared the shores of Havelock Island, but still two miles out to sea, the Japanese, using bayonets, forced many of the civilians to jump into the water and to make their own way to the beaches. Mothers with infants in their arms and the elderly were kicked and shoved with a complete lack of compassion, resulting in the deaths of over 100 – presumed to have been drowned or taken by sharks.

The last war crime perpetrated on the Andaman Islanders by the Japanese was as mindless as it was brutal. It was almost as if the Japanese had decided on one last killing spree, though some there are who suggest, that the Japanese had been atomic-bombed twice, that the country was on its knees and that it had lost the war. These factors must have been known to the Naval HQ in the Andamans, thus suggesting that instead of reason, a mood of revenge prevailed among the Japanese invaders. Whatever the hypothesis, a terrible fact remains.

On 14 August, one day before Japan's surrender, 800 civilians were rounded up and crammed on a ship, then, with a detachment of heavily armed Japanese troops, the ship sailed for a small island, again uninhabited, but this time no one was forced to jump into the sea. The Japanese had something worse in store for them. Upon arrival at this island, everybody was ordered into boats and taken ashore. Finally, when disembarkation was complete and the 800 civilians were milling about aimlessly on the beach, the detachment of Japanese troops came ashore.

What followed was a massacre of criminal proportions. Many civilians terrified, tried to flee into nearby undergrowth though most of them were shot down, but two of them did manage to escape the slaughter and fled into the jungle interior. It took over an hour for the Japanese to massacre 798 civilians. This entailed shooting, bayoneting, and for those soldiers who wanted to, beheading. With the sadistic killings completed, the Japanese troops returned to the ship, leaving behind them a beach littered with hundreds of corpses and the white sands permeated with hundreds of bloodstains between the dead.

The next day, 15 August, the Japanese Empire surrendered. While the world rejoiced, the Japanese authorities on the Andamans pondered deeply. Uppermost in their minds was the certainty of Allied forces returning to liberate the Islands and to accept the Japanese Commanding Officer's surrender, but worse, the spectre of past atrocities particularly their most recent one, committed just the day before, must have pricked their consciences. To conceal the mass slaughter of the previous day, orders were issued that the burial detail was to return to the 'Island of Death' promptly, and remove all traces of the slaughter.

This was carried out within twenty-four hours. On the island, every corpse was placed on one of a number of funeral pyres that were prepared with wood gathered from the jungle. Then, amidst fierce flames, the victims of the massacre were consumed and reduced to fragmented bone and ashes. Finally, pits were dug in the sand and the burnt remains along with still hot embers, buried. Only the bloodstains now blackened by the fierce rays of a tropic sun, remained. Satisfied at the complete concealment of the previous butchery, the burial detail returned to their base to report and ease the burden on their commander's mind. But despite the cover-up, the Allies learned of this war crime - and others, from grieving relatives and the two survivors.

Regrettably, it is not known which War Crimes Tribunal sat in judgement on the Andaman Islands war criminals, but what is known is, the leniency of

the sentence when passed on the principal officer responsible for this final unnecessary massacre. He was sentenced to just two years' imprisonment – slightly more than one day's imprisonment for each murder. One wonders what the sentence would have been if these unfortunate victims were Europeans? If ever there was a miscarriage of justice, this was it.

II

THE HEROIC

NETHERLANDS EAST INDIES

The capture of the Netherlands East Indies by Japanese forces was a traumatic experience for the conquered. The gallant but vain fighting against the Japanese was a most unequal contest of arms and men that despite courage and valour, could only have one ending. What stunned the population, natives and Netherlands citizens alike, was the unwarranted savagery and ferocity inflicted upon the nation as a whole. The Japanese were arrogant and bestial in victory for no valid reason – but then, reason was alien to their mentality.

Men, women and children were treated abominably as a deliberate policy – particularly residents of European extraction. The qualities of mercy were a barren resource to the war-crazed minds of the Japanese. The occupation of all the territories of the former Netherlands East Indies was accompanied by brutality, torture, starvation, and unspeakable acts of depravity including the rape of many too-young Dutch girls. What was once a lawful and prosperous Administration, guided and sustained by democratic ideals and justice, was turned upside down with the arrival of the Japanese who brought with them, the harsh regime of oriental madness and, chillingly, the touch of death.

Wherever the Japanese set foot, misery, suffering and wilful murder followed. Human Rights were completely ignored and replaced with cruel suffering, wilful neglect, forced (slave) labour, and all the evils of genocidal intent that they were more than capable of inflicting. Not a land or island that the Japanese occupied was spared their horrors. They ravaged like demonic locusts with every crime known to mankind in their armoury of intimidation and mindless terror. Small wonder then that their presence was feared.

Wherever possible, the Japanese Armed Forces were supplied with army-run brothels that required the services of what is now known to have numbered approximately 250,000 women and girls. Few of these unfortunate females were

volunteers, the vast majority of them were forced into sexual bondage by the Japanese against their will and were forced under menaces to satisfy the lusts of Japanese soldiery and to become exposed to venereal disease.

No sooner had the Netherlands East Indies succumbed to the overwhelming might of Japan, than army-run brothels were quickly established in various parts of the conquered East Indies. It is not an exaggeration to state that throughout all the countries occupied by the Japanese, scores of 'official army' brothels operated not only with the armed services active consent, but also with that of the Government of Japan. This disgraceful episode will be addressed in the book's closing pages. Instead, attention will be directed towards the period of Japan's 'benevolent' occupation of the Netherlands East Indies.

Within one week of Japan's conquest and consolidation of its harsh rule, thousands of Netherlands nationals were dispossessed of their homes and property and forced into concentration camps by their new Asian masters. Families were deliberately separated and compelled to live in appalling squalor. Men to all-male camps and women and children to all-female camps. Then, for some perverse reason, the Japanese ordered all European boys, from as young as ten, to leave their mothers and enter another special camp that they had established for juvenile boys. The action was unnecessarily cruel but it had a sinister objective so far as the Japanese were concerned.

The forceful incarceration of thousands of young Dutch boys in overcrowded youth-camps will forever remain a stain on the Japanese conscience. That these young boys were herded together for the sinister gratification of their lustful captors cannot be discounted in view of the known depravity and licentiousness of Japanese soldiers whose sordid exploits in sexual debauchery with captive women and girls is now an established fact – despite post-war concealment and subsequent vehement Japanese denials.

Most of these boys were of school age and were instantly deprived of education for the next four years. There were a number of 'boys camps', but the principal ones were at Ujung Pandang, Banjarmasin, Surabaya, Bandung, Chang Dok Priok, Djakarta, and Pandang (formerly Penang). In one camp, 4,000 boys were confined in an area infested with rats as big as cats and where the space available, under normal conditions, would have been considered over-crowded for 500. The living conditions could only be described as appalling, but then, with the hateful perverseness of the Japanese, the squalor and over-crowding was intentional.

To wage such hardships against 'neutral' boys, they were too young to be a

military threat, was a callous perversity of their inscrutable Asian masters. The following is a typical recount of what these unfortunate boys endured. Most of them were attending school when the Japanese occupied cities and towns. It was not expected that children would be selected for 'special treatment', but selected they were. During the first week of the Japanese occupation of Java, soldiers swooped on schools and herded all European boys together then, an officer told them that education was no longer necessary and to leave their schoolbooks, rulers and pencils behind. Following this incomprehensible order, the boys were obliged to return to their homes and there await the pleasure of their new masters.

In many instances what followed was the rule rather than the exception, particularly where European families lived in rural areas or smaller towns. Not unexpectedly, a truck would screech to a stop outside a house occupied by Europeans. Japanese soldiers, armed with rifles and fixed bayonets and led by an officer, would swarm into the house and order everyone to assemble. Then, the occupants would be ordered to pack one suitcase with clothes, nothing else, and to leave all other personal effects, valuables and worldly goods behind.

Then, shoved and pushed, the Europeans would be bundled out of their home and to the astonishment of friendly neighbouring natives bused on to the back of the waiting truck, surrounded by armed soldiers. The first destination would be a holding camp that was usually, deliberately, indescribably filthy. Household refuse would have been previously deposited within the camp to attract rats and vermin and to make the living conditions as squalid as Japanese inventiveness could manage. The camp would be surrounded with barbed wire and guarded night and day – not that the prisoners could get out, but to prevent friendly natives, some of whom were cherished friends, from slipping food to the inmates.

Then would come the day of separation. Husbands, fathers, uncles and grand-fathers would be taken away, never to be seen for the next three and a half years – some, never again. Then it was the boys turn. Handled roughly by jabbering soldiers with their ever present fixed bayonets and inscrutable slanted eyes, boys, most of them scared stiff, did as they were told with alacrity. Swiftly climbing on to lorries and guarded by soldiers who continually squinted at them pitilessly, the boys would be taken to the railway station and herded into boxcars designed for goods, not passengers. Without food or water, and with the sliding doors nailed to prevent possible escape, the boys, 120 to a boxcar, endured three and a half days of deliberate torture that could be compared to a quite hot oven.

Some boys did not survive the rail journey and were laid one on top of the other, their sad deaths a release from what would have been in store for them at the 'boys camp'. With a little extra room that was gained by the boys' deaths, it was possible for some of the surviving boys to take turns sitting down, their young minds unable to comprehend such barbaric cruelty inflicted upon them, craving for water and food, especially water, for their parched and thirsty young bodies. Mercifully, but no thanks to the Japanese, the train finally arrived, after many stops and starts, at the 'boys camp', situated about a mile from the railway station. But there the suffering did not end. When the boxcar doors were un-nailed, unlocked and opened, the boys stumbled out of the dark and super-heated interiors only to collapse on the ground, many of them in a faint.

The Japanese soldiers, should have been moved to compassion by the suffering and deprivation that the young boys had been through, but not these Sons of Heaven. With blows from rifle butts and considerable face slapping, the boys were revived in the 'benevolent' Japanese way as counting was performed. Then, there were outcries of concern. Some boys were found to be missing. quickly, the soldiers clambered into the boxcars and dragged numbers of dead boys out. The NCO who was making the count, relaxed his stern expression upon seeing bodies, but his change of demeanour was not due to sympathy, it was because the totals now added up correctly.

Goaded by leering guards, the boys stumbled and dragged themselves through the city's streets, many of them totally exhausted and dehydrated. Natives watched their laboured progress in silent sympathy, while one braver than the rest, darted towards a very small boy who had collapsed and thrust a piece of mango fruit into his parched mouth.

A nearby soldier unslung his rifle with bayonet fixed, yelling his anger. Two quick thrusts into the Christian native's body from the bayonet and he was dead. Not content with this barbarity, the soldier slammed his booted foot into the prostrate boy's face, causing the piece of mango to fly from his mouth, but not that it mattered. Already half-dead, the vicious kick ended the boy's life. Other boys passing, looked down hopelessly and with terror heightened, what evil had befallen them, they must have wondered.

When the boys arrived at their 'special camp', they were made to stand under the burning sun while a fresh count - of the living, was made. 'They were now,' they were told, 'under the benevolent protection of the Imperial Japanese Army.' Young as most of the boys were, this proclamation sounded like a death penalty. They had already endured dreadful privations under Japanese

benevolence on the train and, weak and exhausted without water or food, many of the boys must have resigned themselves to never seeing another day or their parents again.

Eventually, the boys were herded into dormitory-like rooms and made to stand with bowed heads as the camp rules were read out. This included the warning that if they tried to escape, they would be shot. Thus began the boys imprisonment. A meagre meal of watery rice was provided as well as one rice ball each. Still famished, but with their thirst slaked, the boys collapsed on to hard beds with one blanket apiece. Exhausted, weakened and broken in spirit, they cared not for what the following day would bring. With young limbs fatigued beyond imagination and though still desperately hungry, they found refuge in sleep, too exhausted to care about the hard boards beneath their bodies.

The next morning, the boys were shaved bald, then instructed forcibly to bow at all times to their Japanese captors. Even more forcibly, they were forbidden to speak the Netherlands language and instead to learn to communicate in Malay. Any infringement of these extra rules would be dealt with severely, they were warned. The boys did not need to be told twice, they had quickly learned what Japanese 'benevolence' really meant. The same afternoon, the boys were formed into work details and marched out under guard to commence, what would be, three and a half years' slave labour. Without speaking to each other in their own tongue and wilfully denied an education, the future looked grim. Also, many of the younger boys suffered home-sickness, missing the love of their parents and families, exacerbated no doubt, by harsh and cruel treatment now confronting their young lives. The Japanese were never punished adequately for this brutal spoliation of young lives, nor does the world know much about the war waged on women and children by the Japanese. Human Rights, seemingly, were of penultimate consideration when Japan was accorded a most favourable and exonerating Peace Treaty.

Returning briefly to the boys plight. Lads, fifteen years of age or older, were compelled to carry 30 kilo bags of grain or some such other content and were forced to work loading and unloading railway goods wagons while the younger boys were forced into lighter but just as menial tasks and, always, with the same long hours. Their daily food, invariably the same and monotonous from one day to the next, consisted of tapioca porridge made from nine litres of pulverized tapioca and one hundred litres of water. Additionally, each boy received six small spoonfuls of rice and a watery soup with, occasionally, a particle of cabbage long past its prime. Because of the lack of chewable food, what was received

was insufficient for young growing boys. They suffered from constant hunger that inevitably translated to malnutrition.

There never was a food shortage outside the 'boys camp' and, inevitably, some smuggling of food was managed, but never sufficient to allay the hunger of twenty boys let alone four thousand. If a boy was caught smuggling food, one of the following punishments was swiftly imposed. A boy would either be rifle-butted, whipped, half-drowned or after a lot of thuggery and near senseless, the lad would be tied to a post and exposed all day to the tropic sun – this latter punishment usually induced sunstroke and not infrequently, death.

By January 1945, the mortality rate of the 'boys camp' was averaging thirty a day. Medicine like medical treatment, was denied, and this lack of care contributed to the escalating death rate. Boys died through neglect and indifference, with many of them calling to their lost parents before slipping into the protective veil of death. Had the Japanese allowed medical treatment for beri-beri, dysentery, cerebral malaria, tuberculosis, diphtheria and yellow fever, then most of the boys would not have died. True, vitamin deficiencies made the boys weak and in many instances they looked like walking skeletons, but with such advanced malnutrition, many boys succumbed to the first disease to strike them down. Enforced hunger, a deliberate policy, was the precursor and catalyst for so many deaths.

Clothes were not supplied by the Japanese, nor were shoes or sandals. The boys were reduced to fashioning loin-cloths with what material they could find. Clearly, it was a sadistic perversion of the Japanese to belittle and humiliate the European boys in the eyes of the local population. After all, the Japanese never did anything without some imbalanced reason.

It was June 1945, that the boys received their first Red Cross parcels, but the Japanese, perverse as ever, with an insane act of lunacy, seized the parcels after they had been distributed and tipped their contents into four large cooking containers – each half-full with boiling water. Later, to the bitter disappointment of the starving boys, instead of their usual tasteless evening meal (that was cancelled) they were given a ladle each of a mixture of Spam, toothpaste, confectionary, shoe-polish, cheese and cigarettes. Some of the boys were so hungry that they tried to eat the revolting mess. In every case those who tried, vomited immediately afterwards. The Japanese giggled and laughed with imbecilic delight at their own cleverness in thinking up such a devilish way of causing the boys despair and deep disappointment if not mental torture.

But worse was the hunger that the boys endured until their next meal in the

morning. With no normal evening meal, sparse and unpalatable that it was, the disheartened boys lay down on their bunks near starving and in deep despair, occasionally whispering their agony in Malay at the cruelty and injustice of the Japanese. One boy, just turned fourteen, could not take this mental torture and constant hunger any more. Suddenly, he screamed his despair in the Netherlands language. 'I curse the Japanese. They are an evil race of madmen.'

Barely had the boy finished yelling his despair than two Japanese soldiers appeared from nowhere – they must have been waiting, perhaps hoping, that one of the older boys would scream his youthful anger. The boy was dragged from his bunk and never seen again. Right up to Japan's surrender two months later, the boys had no idea how the war was progressing. So far as they were concerned, because the Japanese had held them prisoner for well over three years, it was presumed that Holland, America and Australia had been defeated and that the Japanese had won the war. In their young minds, the Japanese would be their evil masters for ever.

All these boys in different 'boys camps', were finally liberated by Allied forces in late August and early September 1945. Many of them freely admitted that only their early Christian upbringing and belief in Jesus Christ – unlike their captors, saved their sanity and fortified their resolution to endure the unendurable. These boys of proud Netherlands heritage did honour to their country with their stoic courage and fortitude against adversity. Those boys who died of disease, malnutrition, torture and murder, also deserve posthumous recognition. They suffered like soldiers for their Queen and country. For these brave victims of the Japanese, age shall not weary them nor the years condemn — young heroes all.

The Japanese imposed a deliberate form of genocide on these Netherlands boys through the insidious use of deliberate starvation, slave labour, torture, ill-treatment, no medical care and other grievous neglect too numerous to mention. That the Japanese got away with so much is unbelievable. Equally reprehensible, was the deliberate policy of denying these boys an education and compelling them to forget their culture and language. All of these boys who survived this unjust imprisonment, when liberated, found themselves four years behind their fellow students when, once again, they resumed their education. The disregard and abuse of Human Rights by the Japanese has never been addressed. Justice demands not just an apology, but compensation for inhuman contempt for life and Human Rights.

The Horrors of N.E.I. Brothels

Though the matter of brothels will be addressed later, it is important to touch briefly on the forced sexual bondage of Netherlands women by the Japanese in the former Netherlands East Indies. This was a deliberate and calculated attempt to demean European women as well as bolstering the ego and superiority complex of the Japanese. The Japanese did nothing by halves or without purpose and reason, no matter how nefarious. Such objectivity was instinctive to their nature. Obliquely, because of Japanese evasiveness and their propensity for minimizing heinous acts with innocuous phraseology and insincere bows, they were considered morally bankrupt and not to be trusted. The Second World War confirmed these behavioural aberrations conclusively.

Few people realize that there were more Netherlands citizens residing in the former Netherlands East Indies than in the Caribbean West Indies. It is conservatively estimated that there were close to 250,000 households of Netherlands citizenship through south-east Asia, approximating to one million Europeans. Most of these families lived in Java and Sumatra, with members in the Public Service, in business on their own account, or as managers or owners of plantations. To understand this background is to appreciate that there must have been at least 250,000 women and girls.

When the invaders occupied these lands with such a scattered but substantial European population, the tasks of rounding them all up and placing them in detention camps was a real exercise for the Japanese, but one that gave them immense satisfaction and particularly for carnal reasons, the incarceration of women and girls. There were many camps, but one of the worst 'women's camps' was at Moentilan in Jogjakarta, central Java. Here hundreds of European females were confined in unsanitary conditions where outbreaks of sickness, including dysentery, debilitated the occupants and made them prone to other life-threatening diseases.

Deliberate starvation, a familiar pattern, as well as beatings for the slightest infringement of rules – including not bowing correctly – were imposed. The women were treated with callous indifference and made to suffer the hardships of the damned. Occasionally an NCO or an officer would roam the camp accompanied by an armed escort. The women, but particularly the girls, feared these impromptu visits. They usually presaged the seizure of a dozen or more unfortunate females, mostly very young, who would be escorted out of the camp and taken to a brothel euphemistically called a 'comfort station'. In these

establishments of shame, the girls were given fresh dresses to wear after a cleansing bath, following which they were assigned to very small bedrooms and ordered to pleasure officers and men when required.

The Japanese officers would rape the girls first, sometimes four or five of them successively, before letting their soldiers loose to repeat the rapes. Eventually, a more ordered sequence of rapes was organized, which allowed for rapes by soldiers during the day and rapes by officers during the night. This shocking conduct was repeated and performed on other European women in dozens of army brothels throughout the Netherlands East Indies for a full three and a half years. If girls became pregnant or contracted venereal disease, they were returned to the 'women's camps' and fresh replacements procured. Needless to say, medical treatment was denied to the cast-off infected girls.

Perhaps the most shameful imposition forced on these despairing girls was the compulsion to satisfy the aberrational lusts of both officers and men. This included deviant sex that on many occasions made the girls vomit and choke as oral sex was performed. These depravities and the demands made on the girls caused many of them to attempt suicide. There was no one to whom they could appeal. The law was the army, and the army ran the brothels.

Equally disgusting was the compulsion enforced, under fear of punishment, to wash and re-use condoms. The white jelly-like substance contained in dozens of used contraceptives, repugnant and revolting, made the girls feel sick, but if they didn't want to get pregnant the task was a necessary one. Condoms were in extremely short supply, even though five million packets of them had been supplied to the army from Japan. A further shipment of ten million was lost when a ship carrying them had been sunk.

Deliberate degradation of these mostly young girls, forced to work as whores and to suffer the indignities of incessant rape, was a crime against humanity and their own 'human rights'. For many, that is those who survived the horrific ordeals of constant bodily violation, the scars of their suffering can never be erased, that is mentally. What occurred is etched indelibly in their minds for ever. To ask them to forgive and forget is to ask too much, particularly when it is realized that these numerous crimes of rape went unpunished. Every soldier, every officer, who raped these girls must have known that what they were doing was reprehensible. For them to suggest that the girls liked the experience would be like suggesting a preference for sugar-coated cyanide. Each and every one of these Japanese rapists were criminals - there can be no distinction, but so numerous were their numbers, that only a very few were punished.

When one looks at every atrocity committed by the Japanese, it becomes staggering to realize that so numerous were their crimes, that if individualized and dealt with by a War Crimes Tribunal, it would have taken ten years, not two, to dispense justice satisfactorily. That is why associations and groups, all over the world, are encountering difficulty in pressing their claims for this very justice that, by its omission, has favoured the Japanese by its default.

Human rights, a precious consideration, became the victim once more, but this time because of political expediency. The Allied leaders at the time of the questionable Peace Treaty were all men. The small and insignificant matter of a few isolated rapes was a concern that did not exercise their minds greatly, if at all. Even had they known, which average intelligence suggests they did, they were not inclined to pursue the matter because of its unpleasant nature and, besides, their latent male chauvinistic libidinousness, though not supporting sex offences against women, prevented them from viewing the atrocities in the correct perspective. Had there been a couple of 'Margaret Thatchers' among the Allied leaders of those post-war days, then certain it is that the women's plight would have been addressed before the Peace Treaty was signed. The fates of history are indeed fickle.

THE KEMPETAI

Without doubt the most hated and the most feared, were the Japanese Military Police – the Kempetai. they were to all intents and purposes, the Gestapo of Japan who within its ranks had the most mindless morons imaginable. They tortured, beheaded, and terrorized anyone unfortunate enough to fall into their clutches. 'They operated like a military Mafia, a law unto themselves,' one survivor was quoted as saying.

Another victim, a former Netherlands East Indies harbour-master, had this to say. 'Their arrogance was extreme and their cruelty unimaginable.' The former port official went on to add, 'I endured an interrogation session for three days non-stop. All the while, I was compelled to stand in my underpants and suffer cigarette burns and beatings. The Kempetai wanted to know the number and whereabouts of our warships and submarines. I told them repeatedly that I was a civilian port official and that I was not privy to naval matters. I was disbelieved and beaten constantly.'

A schoolteacher captured at Chang Dok Priok was also interrogated and as a consequence, suffered a ruptured ear drum and was blinded. How he suffered his injuries deserves comment, if for no other reason than his bravery and loyalty to Holland. Being a quarter Eurasian, the Kempetai began by reminding him that in the eyes of the Dutch he was a second-class citizen and therefore should support the East Asia co-prosperity sphere and the Japanese liberators. Unmoved by such blandishments, the schoolteacher continued to conceal the whereabouts of a small arms dump that for a short period had been hidden in the school grounds and which was destined for guerrilla warfare.

Screaming his rage, the Kempetai captain was about to order the teacher's removal from his home to the military police headquarters for more 'benevolent' interrogation, when his eye caught sight of a small portrait of Her Majesty Queen Wilhemina of the Netherlands Empire. Pointing his sword he sneered. 'Emperor of Japan, number one. Your Queen, number ten.' Then

stepping forward, he slashed at the portrait in a frenzy. The schoolteacher inadvisedly, moved forward to remonstrate. For his trouble he received a terrific thwack on the side of his head from the flat of the officer's sword. Not only was he made permanently deaf in one ear, but subsequently, lighted cigarettes were jabbed into his eyes at Kempetai headquarters, but still he did not reveal any information. After a few days and knowing that their victim was blinded for life, an exquisite permanent disability so far as the Kempetai were concerned, the teacher was released on parole.

The following is another example of Japanese brutality. The Kempetai Headquarters was situated on the corner of Bodjongatar in Semarang and occupied the entire building previously an administration centre of the former Justice Ministry. Within its walls and under the 'benign' auspices of the Kempetai, several back rooms were outfitted with various 'play things' designed to impress reluctant visitors. There were whips, claw-lock pliers for extracting finger or toenails, clubs, a brazier, handcuffs, leg-irons, iron head-clamps to crush skulls, pistols, samurai swords, short water hoses, vials of acid, electric shock equipment and much, much more. These devices of entertainment provided to make unwilling guests talk, were supplied by the Army who in turn were directed by the Ministry of War, an important arm of the government of Japan.

On one occasion, several Netherlands nationals were brought to the Kempetai Headquarters in Semarang for questioning. For nine months they had eluded internment in a detention camp and were suspected of having waged guerrilla warfare against the Imperial forces of Japan for some time. It was certain that ultimately the five European prisoners would be executed, if only for their defiance of the 'Imperial Occupation Laws'. Because of their refusal to betray friendly natives who helped them exist in the hills, and to admit that they were guerrilla fighters, they were transported to the Kempetai Headquarters under heavy guard and handed over to Major Kusaka, the senior duty officer.

Interrogation of the new prisoners began almost immediately. First they were told how much the Japanese admired brave fighters and that it was damned rotten luck – for them, that they were eventually captured. Cigarettes were offered along with plates of enticing food and cold drinks. The questioning was mild, almost cordial, and frequent reference was made to the prisoners' courage and to the loyalty of the natives who, it was solemnly promised, would come to no harm for helping them.

Then, the major in a burst of camaraderie, confided his admiration of gallant men who had to be captured because they wouldn't surrender.

It should be pointed out that the prisoners were seated in the major's spacious office and had not sighted the 'play-things' in the back rooms. The major, in a further attempt to assuage any fears of ill-treatment, sat on the edge of his desk and casually drawing on a cigarette from time to time, proceeded to recount his experiences and impressions of Holland, a country he much admired he admitted, waxing eloquent on its historical and enterprising past. With further cigarettes dispensed and all the delicious food consumed – the prisoners had been starving – his questioning became a little more inquisitive though remaining courteous and polite as the day wore on.

Clearly, the prisoners thought, this officer was civilized and a gentleman. He had even suggested using the influence of the Kempetai to have their certain death sentences that would be delivered by a military court, commuted to imprisonment for life. The major's deceptions did not however elicit any useful information from the prisoners. Their answers, though supplied in similar friendly vein, avoided naming villages and towns where loyal natives had succoured them and who had warned of Japanese patrols. The interview turned out to be a most unrewarding and time-consuming affair for the Kempetai major, but it was a charade employing all the techniques of psychology that his training allowed. More 'benevolent' interrogation would resume on the morrow if guile and deception failed. Sighing his reluctance at having such brave men as prisoners, the major concluded the interview with exaggerated regret, but with a chilling reminder that they would be 'interviewed' by 'others' the following morning.

The major's promise was kept. One hour before dawn on the following day, the prisoners were roughly shaken awake and escorted to individual torture rooms by leering guards. What saved them from toe and finger-nail removals and head crushing was the fact that it was unfortunately necessary to keep the prisoners intact for their appearance in court – the real torture could come later. Instead, they were subjected to beatings when wearing only their underpants, repetitious face slapping, prods from copper rods delivering spasmodic coulombs of electricity, cigarette burns, and acid formulation applied to their genitals that burned searingly; suspended from a ceiling hook with their feet immersed in a container of electrified water while a copper rod was inserted into their rectums for the most excruciating effect that electric shocks could deliver, and other forms of refined torture.

Not one prisoner betrayed anything even to the major who, at about midday, visited the separate torture rooms expressing his dismay and shock at the suffering of the prisoners. 'It is out of my hands,' he lied while sucking his teeth, 'the colonel has ordered this punishment, but I can have it stopped if only you will co-operate.' The major was lying because it was he who had ordered the 'persuasion' procedures and besides, he was the ranking officer at the Kempetai headquarters – the colonel in charge, was based at Batavia (Djakarta).

Not one of the prisoners co-operated despite their dreadful torture that continued thereafter for several days and until a prisoner died. The manner of his death was entirely attributable to suffering and occurred unexpectedly. It was late at night and after having endured ten hours of previous torture, a prisoner in his mid fifties, and showing obvious signs of physical distress (unbeknown to his captors he was suffering a heart attack) was held down on the floor while a water hose was placed in his mouth. When his stomach was fully distended and bulging with water, one of his torturers jumped on his abdomen. As water spurted from the victim's mouth he collapsed and died.

Worried that the other prisoners might succumb the same way, the major reluctantly ordered the tortures to cease. It was important that the prisoners lived to be beheaded – resistance fighters could expect no less. For the next seven months the surviving prisoners were imprisoned and kept in wooden crates fixed against an outside wall and with stout wooden bars facing the front. These crates measured four feet by four feet and were three feet high, not much larger than dog kennels. This inhuman confinement was maliciously arranged by the Kempetai to prevent the prisoners from stretching out or sleeping comfortably. During the succeeding months, until their military trial, the prisoners were subjected to the most degrading treatment. Vomit from other prisoners being tortured was offered as food while, on occasions, particularly at night, watery and foul smelling human excreta would be flung over the prisoners curled up bodies. Food, such as it was, consisted of rice without taste and served as a gruel with occasionally, human vomit included.

An ulcer on one of the prisoner's legs turned septic and, denied cleansing water, it turned gangrenous. At this stage of advanced infection, medical attention should have been provided, even if only to keep the prisoner alive for his execution, but it was denied. Predictably, the suffering victim died of gangrene poisoning – assisted no doubt by malnutrition and his bestial incarceration.

With two prisoners spared the executioner's sword, there were only three

prisoners left to stand trial. Debilitated and weak as they were and forced to live in their own excreta, as well as that of others, and all suffering from dysentery, the merciful day of their trial arrived. Grudgingly, they were dragged out of their cages and forced to walk to a prisoners' shower room, a misnomer really, because all it boasted was one tap and hose. There, crouched like monkeys, it was impossible to stand erect, they were hosed and abused for being so filthy.

Eventually, the three prisoners were taken by lorry to a Military High Court wearing the clothes they were captured in. While waiting their turn to be tried, a sadistic guard told them that no one came out free. The court would administer just punishment and their sentence would be death. The guard would then go on to explain decapitation in detail. First, they would have to dig their own graves, then they would be made to kneel in front of the prepared holes for a descending samurai sword. With feigned sympathy, the guard urged the prisoners to thrust their heads forward revealing as much of the neck as possible, this would allow for a clean and merciful beheading, he advised. Not content with this dreadful description, he went on to illustrate the moments following decapitation. Blood, he said, would spurt out of the severed neck, sometimes spattering beyond three feet. The head would drop into the hole followed by the body though not infrequently, the executioner would be obliged to kick the headless corpse into its last resting place.

The mental torture that these Netherlands prisoners must have felt can only be imagined as they listened in compulsory silence to the procedures of their pending execution. But they had one more day to live after being told by the guard that executions were usually carried out within three hours of sentencing. The court unexpectedly adjourned for the day – it was late in the afternoon. Consequently, the prisoners were taken to a nearby heavily guarded compound and placed with other prisoners who were awaiting Japanese justice for a variety of alleged offences some of which would attract only life imprisonment, though others there were who faced certain death.

In the wonderful but brief company of their compatriots, the prisoners revealed their experiences with each other and sympathetic old friends. Farewell messages were passed for their families, but with faint hope because of the uncertainty that any of their fellow prisoners would survive the war.

The following morning and without food or water for thirty-six hours, the three prisoners, along with others from the compound, were taken back to the High Court. Their names were called first and within half an hour they were

found guilty of all charges. Without an adequate defence or counsel and with the proceedings being conducted in the Japanese language and with documentation in Japanese, they didn't stand a chance. Three hours later besides holes that they had dug, the three prisoners were beheaded.

THE RAILWAY OF DEATH

All the world knows about the *Bridge over the River Kwai*. It was a best selling book and, later, turned into a movie. But very few know of another railway that the Japanese compelled prisoners to construct. Its completion embodied all the horrors of the Burmese Railway and took as many lives. Through deliberate suppression by vested interests, Japanese atrocities, for political and financial reasons, have not attracted the same odious publicity, particularly in films, as have those of the Third Reich. War films as an example, especially American have, for the past twenty years, laboured the Vietnam War incessantly. This is indeed strange because the war waged by Imperial Japan, took scores of thousands more lives and was conducted with such brutal finesse, that it made the Vietnamese look amateurs by comparison.

One can't help but suspect the power of the Japanese yen in this obvious suppression of its dreadful history during the Second World War. It should be added that for every Vietnamese atrocity, there were at least fifty Japanese, who could provide a wealth of material, mostly suppressed, for many horrendous war films. But, the Japanese are inexplicably spared the embarrassment, unlike the much ostracized Vietnamese. One cannot help but wonder and ponder. Why?

The Japanese ordered the construction of a 215 kilometres long railway through central Sumatra: from Pakan Baru to Muara. This project entailed surveying swampy marshes, ravines, almost impenetrable jungle, rivers and valleys. Not only was the railway needed to assist the Japanese war effort, it was hoped to have it completed in time to honour the illustrious twenty-year reign of His Majesty Emperor Hirohito. All that was needed was manpower (slaves).

Prisoners of war, civilians and servicemen of Netherlands nationality, English and Australian and as well, thousands of press-ganged Javanese slave labour (Romushas) were transported to various staging camps and set to work hewing and clearing the jungle along the route it was envisaged the railway line would

follow. Other prisoners and slaves – and there was no shortage, were forced to bend their backs under a sweltering tropic sun and laboriously to prepare the foundations for the railway sleepers by repetitiously carrying baskets of filling and crushed metal in an endless stream like ants.

Then would follow the sleeper gangs and track-layers all working to a common purpose and under the vigilant eye of their Japanese guards. Slacking because of fatigue or sickness was unmercifully punished with beatings from wooden clubs or rifle butts. The Emperor's railway had to be built on time. Though the Japanese were sadistically cruel there were other perils. Within the dense marshy jungle lived panthers, tigers, snakes – mostly venomous, and malarial mosquitoes. Prisoners or Romusha slaves took their lives in their hands if daring to enter the surrounding jungle to answer the call of nature. Several of them had been taken by beasts of prey while crouched and hidden in thickets – much to the amusement of the callous guards.

On three occasions, amidst terrified yells from luckless victims, the Japanese soldiers chortled with glee as the beasts, clearly seen, mauled and savaged their prey before dragging their next meal deeper into the jungle. The guards could have shot the predators, but refused to do so. Watching a weak and sick man being overcome by a hungry wild animal, was a more lusting and exciting experience.

Then there were snakes. Some of these reptiles blended in so perfectly with the undergrowth, even at the jungle's edge where most of the wiser prisoners chose to defecate, that they remained unseen until they struck. Few victims lived longer than ten minutes afterwards. But the worst killers of all and responsible for spreading malaria to almost epidemic proportions were the swamp mosquitoes. No sooner had the blazing sun slipped below the horizon, than the deadly pests swarmed from the dank undergrowth and water-logged marshes, searching for sustenance – particularly human blood. The evening and night air would be filled with the whining sound of thousands of pestiferous mosquitoes, seeking, finding, then thrusting their sucking proboscis into any exposed part of human flesh they could find.

Along with malaria were the debilitating afflictions of dysentery, beri-beri, scurvy, malnutrition, and the ever present threat of cholera. All in all, a living hell on earth without including the mindless ferocity and savagery of the Japanese guards. As for food, such as it was, the kindest description would be, disgraceful. A survivor describes extreme hunger under 'Japanese benevolence'.

We schemed up the most desperate but ludicrous ways of obtaining food, so hungry were we. Foremost in our tortured minds was the thought of succulent pork. There were numerous wild pigs, but they were so big and adversarial that to corner and catch one without weapons would have been a hopeless task in our weakened condition. Piglets we could manage, but we didn't have the strength to chase them nor for that matter the resolution because, the sows usually nearby, and four times our individual weight, would have made short work of us. Then, there was the fear of boars with their long upturned tusks and their ability to rip any one of us open mortally. They were huge compared to our fragile weight and would have killed us with ease.

Occasionally the guards would shoot a pig – for themselves, with the result that facing up to reality, the best we could hope to snare was bush or swamp rats and occasionally a snake. Then there were times that our work party came across papaya trees as well as banana and mango but usually, they had been stripped bare by the advance work gangs who initially cleared the jungle for the railway line. Thus we nibbled raw rice illicitly gained as well as starch and left over pig bones from Japanese mess tents. Twice we found dead snakes flyblown and smelling but whatever, when cut up and boiled they represented food, no matter how unpalatable. It was revolting to eat rats, but at least they were freshly caught and sustaining. We found that the most flavoursome part of a rat was its tail.

The monsoon season was a really trying period. Despite the adverse conditions. The guards, some of them Koreans wearing Japanese uniforms, would give us a very hard time, clubbing the sick and the exhausted equally. Illness was considered a ruse deliberately contracted to sabotage Japan's glorious war effort. The Korean guards had been told by their Japanese masters that as soon as the railway line was completed, they would be allowed to return to their families in Korea. With such false promises believed, the Korean guards drove us mercilessly. They were worse than the Japanese – if that was possible.

Once again, inadequate food rations restricted the amount of work each prisoner or Romusha slave could do. The malnutrition and debilitation that followed, reduced the work contribution still further to the point that disease and death began to cut a swathe through the thousands in the captive workforce. The Japanese must have known this – their army doctors would have

said as much, but perversely, instead of supplying better food and increasing the ration scale, the Japanese chose the easier option of replacing hundreds of dead workers with hundreds of live ones from prison camps as well as rounding up more healthy Romusha labourers from Java. Human life meant nothing to the Sons of Heaven.

No one will ever know the exact number of dead press-ganged Romushas. They were treated appallingly until they perished. A good number of them were of the Moslem faith and true to their beliefs would, at a certain time of the day, turn and kneel facing Mecca for a short period of prayer. This was a period that the Japanese delighted in most. Wading in among the devout Romushas while they were stooped forward with their foreheads touching the ground and their buttocks fully exposed, rifle butts and clubs would be wielded with maximum force, crashing against emaciated buttocks with unbelievable savagery.

The Romushas story has never been told – again because of politics. Dr Soekarno, the post-war President of Indonesia – formerly the Netherlands East Indies, suppressed all accounts of Japanese atrocities against his people. He collaborated with the Japanese during their occupation of the country and, as a reward, was installed as the puppet leader of his oppressed nation. With such a dictatorial and autocratic post-war President, following Holland's granting of legal independence, the truth about his people's suffering under Japanese occupation was not allowed to be discussed – for a very personal reason.

There are still photos in circulation showing Soekarno standing beside Japanese army officers and smiling approvingly while watching a group of his fellow countrymen who, bound hand and foot, were being bayoneted to death by Japanese soldiers. Soekarno was an opportunist politician and pro-Japanese. Following the end of the Second World War and after a short period in a political limbo, Soekarno re-emerged as the people's champion for independence from Holland. Eventually, this was granted and Soekarno became the lawful President of the nation renamed Indonesia. One of his first acts was 'pay-back'. Favourable agreements and concessions were granted to Japan for the acquisition of Indonesian oil and, despite Japan's previous rape of the country, cordial relations were established.

But Soekarno was not the only politician to wave the olive branch at Japan. Politicians from other countries, with encouragement from the United States, followed suit. Never mind the awful Japanese atrocities. That was history. Forget it. Therefore, it is not difficult to understand the expediency of politics

and the injustices that were created with a too-hasty Peace Treaty. The war dead in their millions, the raped women in their hundreds of thousands, and yes, even the gentle Romushas, were a forgotten commodity. Expendable.

Even with suitable clothing, decent boots, a supply of first-aid medicaments and hunting rifle, it would be a hardy person indeed to survive for two years in the hostile environment of central Sumatra. For the prisoners of war and Romusha slaves, the odds were stacked against them. Survival was tenuous against the forces of nature. The most dreaded precursor to more serious affliction was a simple laceration, more especially around the legs. Without cleansing water and the benefit of first-aid, such cuts or lacerations invariably became inflamed and infected resulting in septicaemia which, in turn, resulted in running sores and deep ulcers. Debilitated by malnutrition and as such wounds worsened, blood poisoning was inevitable, often followed by gangrene, amputation without anaesthetics, and finally, death. A little human care by the Japanese and a dab of iodine on original lacerations would have been all that was needed to prevent these avoidable complications.

That this was wilful neglect there can be no doubt. The Japanese as a race, had no soul or compassion. Suffering and human misery was their stock-in-trade and death, a mere inconvenience. Leeches and mosquitoes and a jungle full of danger were bad enough, but the weather played its part as well. Some days the tropic sun beat down on bared backs with inexorable intensity. Other days, the monsoon rains would pelt down, turning everything into a sticky quagmire. Through all of this, the prisoners and slaves were compelled to work day after day. In many ways death was a welcome release.

The exhausted work gangs were forced to construct a 215 kilometre long railway right through mid-Sumatran tropical jungle and without any hope of escape. Their toil and misery, suffering and death, endured until the Japanese capitulation on 15 August 1945. More than 10,000 died in the construction of this notorious railway. For them there was no justice. They suffered death after cruel privations and in the vast anonymity of the Sumatran jungle. Because of Japanese brutality their voices are stilled forever. One wonders what, if any, compensation was paid to their next of kin. Certain it is, knowing current Japanese resistance to such claims, that not one yen has been offered.

Clothed in tattered rags, afflicted by recurring bouts of malaria, dysentery and other life-sapping diseases, the forgotten thousands who survived this Japanese nightmare deserved a compassionate recognition of their dreadful suffering and the compensation that has been steadfastly turned into a political

football of prevarication by Tokyo. There is a moral responsibility for Japan to confront its evil past wherever the touch of death, brutality and suffering may have occurred during its aggressive war of expansion. Justice means accountability and accountability means compensation as well as punishment.

On the last day of the war and when the red Japanese sun finally went down, the death railway from Pakan Baru to Muara was completed. The last spike that the scarred survivors drove into the last sleeper was one of copper – for lack of a gold one. The toll in human lives was enormous and included nearly 700 Europeans as well as around 10,000 Javanese Romushas. Then there were the 1,626 European prisoners who perished on the way to Sumatra, torpedoed by an Allied submarine, on board the SS *Van Waenwijck* and the MV *Junyo Mary*.

Poignant too, was the bestial fate of the cheerful brown-skinned Romushas. They were supposed to enjoy the fruits of the East Asia co-prosperity plan falsely declared by the Japanese. If the Japanese considered death enjoyable, then that is what occurred. It is probable that the remains of thousands of these peaceful natives from Java lie under the sleepers of a railway line that was never to see a train after 1945. All the agonies, misery, despair, suffering and death were for nothing. The railway line no longer exists. Scores of kilometres of rail have been looted and sold as scrap – mostly back to the Japanese. What remains is slowly rusting away beneath an encroaching jungle or, is corroded beyond redemption in the stagnant black marsh water of mosquito infested swamps.

This appalling chronicle has never been made public before, but then, one doesn't have to look far to understand the reason. Whatever new evidence is unearthed of Japanese atrocities, a veil of silence descends. Our own politicians don't want to know, newspaper publishers are reluctant to print and, in any event, the Japanese will disclaim moral responsibility. Thus 'Human Rights Abuses' that should be investigated, are conveniently ignored. Why?

Concluding this sorry narrative is an eyewitness account supplied by a survivor who, despite appalling odds, suffered the insufferable, endured the unendurable and lived to tell his tale.

During the monsoon season in Camp 5, I had to wade through mud up to my knees to fetch breakfast that comprised a lump of tasteless starch, a sort of paste made from tapioca meal, and that was it. Unfortunately for us and often as not, our camp was constantly shifted as the railway line progressed. For some unfathomable reason, the Japanese delighted in choosing a site, where possible, close to mosquito infested swamps – never

on dry higher ground. I guess this was done to cause us the most possible and extreme discomfort. The Japanese were a sadistic lot and probably relished the thought of our being scourged by swarms of hungry mosquitoes.

Then there were leeches that sucked the blood from us, hundreds of them that invariably contributed to sores which quickly became infected. Even poisonous plants, and there were many, added to our misery and further infection. The work demanded from us was inhuman. The worst experience that I can recall was being made to shoulder scorching hot rails that rubbed and chafed our skin as we walked unsteadily over uneven ground. This labour was unbearably hard in our weakened condition and not helped with clubs or rifle butts if the guards decided to amuse themselves. Inevitably, I developed running sores on both shoulders that subsequently became infected. Despite the severe inflammation and suppurating sores I was denied medical attention. Two of our chaps, both doctors in civilian life, could do little. They had no antibiotics or medicines to treat such wounds with. Truly, under the Sons of Heaven, it was hell on earth.

Then I contracted malaria – as if running sores and dysentery was not enough. Along with sixty-four other seriously ill prisoners and Romusha slaves I was transferred to Camp 2 and admitted as a 'camp invalid' – a place where all the seriously ill came to die. Fortunately for me, it was the middle of August 1945. The Japanese, who had so arrogantly despised anyone who surrendered, did so themselves. We had been told after our own capture by them that it was more honourable to commit hara-kiri than to surrender like women. It's a pity that the Japanese did not practise what they preached.

When liberation came I was waiting to die in the 'dead men's area' of the camp. Next to me was a chap completely blown-up with beri-beri. I can well recall the over-worked 'prisoner doctors' puncturing the dying man and drawing off three litres of foul-smelling fluid. As for myself, amoeboid dysentery had ravaged my intestines and coupled with malaria along with an emaciated skeletal physique, I knew that my hours were numbered. Being seriously ill and therefore 'useless mouths', the Japanese no longer supplied us with any food, not even a cup of banana soup, which the less sick sometimes got. All I was waiting for was death and a shallow grave. Then suddenly, our cruel guards disappeared. The war was over. Good had triumphed over evil.

JAPANESE PRISONERS OF WAR

Following the Allied landing at Guadalcanal and the subsequent conflicts against Japanese forces in the Solomons, 812 Japanese prisoners captured after fierce action or picked up at sea were transported to New Zealand. A camp to accommodate them was built at Featherston in the Wairarapa province during September-October 1942, and the first batch of prisoners arrived shortly afterwards. The camp-site chosen had previously been sixty acres of land used as a military training camp during the First World War. Initially, the camp comprised little more than rows of army tents with its perimeter enclosed by barbed wire, but by March 1943, a good number of wooden huts were ready for occupation. Provided also were mess-huts, shower huts, and covered latrines. A neutral observer described the comfortable accommodation as 'airy and well-lit'.

Each prisoner was allowed five blankets and a full set of clothing, including an extra pair of trousers. Food was prepared by the prisoners' own cooks and included per man a daily ration of six ounces of fish or meat, ten ounces of rice, and twelve ounces of bread, as well as fresh milk and eggs, butter, and fresh fruit and vegetables. This ample and healthy diet, with its high nutritional value, helped the swift recovery of a number of prisoners who were suffering from tropical and deficiency diseases.

Provided also were full medical, dental, and optical services – a large number of Japanese suffered from impaired sight, and spectacles were provided as needed. Most of the prisoners were required to work at camp duties, including clearing gorse and improving the camp grounds, while others were assigned to making concrete blocks and cultivating vegetables. They were paid at the rates agreed by the Commonwealth Governments for payment to German prisoners. A work week entailed 33 hours and concluded at Saturday midday. The afternoon and Sundays were rest periods. Those prisoners who only did light camp duties, usually had their afternoons free and devoted this and their other

leisure hours to playing outdoor sports, drawing and carving, tending flower gardens around the entrances to their huts, or playing Japanese card games. Although they were encouraged to write letters to their families in Japan, none of the prisoners availed themselves of this privilege for fear that their folks back home would assume that having been captured, they must have surrendered – a deep shame that would have reflected on their families.

Overall, there were 720 Japanese prisoners of war at Featherston, of whom some 500 were members of labour detachments of the Imperial Japanese Army. The remainder consisted of 8 naval officers, 104 naval ratings, and combat personnel of the Japanese Army and Air Force. The labour detachments were in the main, model prisoners but, the latter grouping displayed arrogance and insolence to the guards and created a number of disciplinary problems. On many occasions, they challenged camp rules at every opportunity to the point of insubordinate behaviour and created difficulties about supplying work parties when required. To further keep the camp guards on edge, they were known to be actively concocting schemes to overpower the guards and escape to the surrounding hills.

None the less, when a neutral inspector visited the camp just before Christmas 1942, a number of Japanese freely spoke with him and expressed their appreciation of the good food and conditions and their general kind treatment. Consequently, the inspector reported to the Government of Japan, that relations between the prisoners and their guards were most satisfactory and that the food and conditions were of a very high standard. The situation, therefore, seemed peaceful and unlikely to foretell any trouble or uprising as serious as that which occurred early the following year.

That the ignominy of capture clearly rankled some of the ex-combat prisoners was understood and indulged with tolerance by the Camp Administration while adhering faithfully to the Prisoners of War Convention of 1929. In fact, in matters of general treatment and discipline, the New Zealand Authorities erred on the side of generosity and compassion towards all of the prisoners. Therefore, when on the morning of 25 February 1943, a Japanese work-party refused to parade for a New Zealand duty officer, an interview was quickly arranged with the camp commandant.

Subsequently, a charade of mind games by two Japanese officers ensued with the commandant and which involved considerable parleying that was countered by repeated orders from the camp adjutant for the men to parade for work detail and for the two Japanese officers who had slipped into the men's compound to

return to their officers' quarters. These requests were met by dogged refusals, accompanied as time wore on by the unconcealed delight of nearby prisoners. About 10.30 am, two hours after the first act of disobedience, the adjutant's orders became ultimatums, but these despairing threats merely invited the reply that 'force would be met with force'. Such was the Japanese recalcitrance.

One of the Japanese officers was then forcibly removed while the remaining officer continued to voice defiance. Frustrated, the adjutant drew his revolver and fired a shot into the air before firing again, this time wounding the Japanese officer in the shoulder. Immediately, a babble of protest from 260 watching prisoners filled the parade ground, quickly followed by a hail of stones and rocks along with other motley missiles and which was followed by a concentrated rush towards the 34 attending armed guards. They held their fire until the nearest prisoner was less than seven yards away. The defensive firing from 34 army rifles continued for a quarter of a minute, so determined was the Japanese onslaught.

When it became possible to count the casualties, it was found that 48 Japanese had been killed and 74 wounded. Six guards were wounded as a result of ricochets and one died later in hospital. In the subsequent investigation that followed, a number of hammers, knives, meat forks, chisels, spanners, and other makeshift implements, including clubs with six-inch nails, a secret arsenal, were found in the possession of both dead and living prisoners. Clearly, the confrontation with the commandant was as much planned as it was provoked, and in view of all the concealed weapons, was a cunningly thought out and deceptive ruse to engage fully the commandant's attention before a determined attempt was made to overpower the guards, take their guns, and fight for the Emperor in the local bush-clad hills in true banzai tradition.

Following a full Court of Inquiry, its findings, exonerating the Camp Administration in responsibility for the Japanese riot and attempted breakout, was forwarded to the Japanese Government through a neutral observer. Predictably, the Government of Japan voiced a strong protest, unmindful of its own treatment of Allied POWs, but notwithstanding, when affairs at the Featherston Camp returned to normal, prisoners' pay allowances were increased, a canteen established and every conceivable confectionary and brand of cigarettes stocked. With the extra pay prisoners earned, they were able to buy slippers, sun-glasses, wristlet watches, trinkets, fountain pens and the like. Thus, with a restored peaceful environment, the Japanese accepted captivity.

THE SHAME OF MILITARY BROTHELS

Whatever the country or island that the Japanese occupied, invariably and wherever possible, brothels were swiftly established. Usually it was said euphemistically, that an army marched on its stomach – this implied good rations and satisfied soldiers, but this axiom was not necessarily true of Japanese troops. Their priority seemingly, and superseding all other considerations, was sex. Hence the term 'lustful soldiery'.

Brothels were to be found everywhere. In Japan, mainland Asia, some Pacific Islands, the former Netherlands East Indies, the Philippines and many other areas of conquered territory. Though the establishment of hundreds of army brothels was an offence to public decency, much more heinous was the fact that the women servicing these brothels as conscripted whores were either captured females in occupied lands or, to increase their numbers, women and virgin girls from Korea, of whom the latter comprised the largest number of sexual slaves. The unfortunate females were shipped around the Pacific to service the sexual needs of Japanese troops and in the process, suffered from all sorts of tropical disease as well as sexually transmitted ones. They were sex-slaves pure and simple and were transported in large numbers to foreign places to satisfy the insatiable lusts of Imperial Japanese troops.

The Japanese government and army, connived together in this sordid flesh trade and in the process ruined thousands of young lives. At the end of the war it was estimated that 250,000 women and girls had been forcibly raped in these disgraceful establishments, not once, but scores of times. They were ill-fed, ill-clothed, and not paid, although, occasionally, they were given meagre amounts of occupation money at the whim of brothel managers, but then only to replace tattered and torn dresses. This occupation money became instantly worthless the moment Japan surrendered.

Korea should be singled out as the country that suffered most at the hands of the Japanese. The occupation and rape of Korea began in 1910 – known as the Colonial Period, but the most suffering occurred during the 'Fifteen Years War' period, 1931–1945. The mindless ferocity, barbarism, slaughter and rapes that occurred in Korea was a litany of atrocities deliberately wreaked to terrify and intimidate the fearful population. So many outrages were committed against these docile people by the Japanese, that the latter should hang their heads in shame.

The whole matter of army 'brothel women' would have to be the most tragic of the numerous Japanese atrocities still being discovered. Only now is the full extent of such uncivilized debauchery becoming a matter of world-wide discussion. Following Japan's defeat in 1945, the War Crimes Tribunals were set up to address and punish thousands of cases of Human Rights abuse. Given the difficulty of language and alphabet and mystical culture, their task was difficult, and made more difficult by Japanese intransigence and a penchant for deception and outright lying. Had these Allied Tribunals known that the Japanese Government and Army had imprisoned 250,000 females as helpless sex-slaves, then certain it is that the 1952 Peace Treaty with Japan would never have been signed.

One reason this awful historical fact was kept secret is because of national shame – guilty consciences, and the policy of the Army to conceal the fact that 'comfort women' were forced into sexual bondage. To add to this duplicity, following Japan's defeat, soldiers and army clerks were ordered to eliminate any records or documents relating to the vast network of brothels and especially the presence of so many expendable whores. Fortifying this secrecy, and luckily for the Japanese, of the scores of thousands of Asian women – particularly the Koreans, who were forced into sexual bondage, not one lamented the dreadful experience. And the reason? They were so ashamed. Good fortune and, once more, deception, favoured the Japanese.

The Tribunals were made aware of the rape of European women in Hong Kong, Singapore and the Netherlands East Indies which numbered a little under 5,000. But of the other 245,000 women who were used as whores also, they were misinformed as to their colossal numbers by the Japanese or, more probable, were told that they were nymphomaniac volunteers – an excuse not beyond the cunning of the defeated Japanese. Research does suggest that, wherever possible, such shameful information was kept from the Tribunals and, as a consequence, not properly investigated. Thus, ignorant, a Peace Treaty was

signed in 1952 exonerating all past crimes of the Japanese and all claims for 'Human Rights Abuses' were absolved. When the Japanese co-signed this too-hasty Peace Treaty, they must have thought that truly, they were indeed the favoured Sons of Heaven once more. Deception had again paid off.

Returning to the brothels in Korea, there was also a sinister reason as well as sexual for their establishment. The Japanese were not too concerned about the prevalence of Korean-Japanese offspring resulting from the hundreds of thousands of sexual encounters. It was inevitable that used condoms could no longer be regarded as reliable. The children being born were half Japanese and as there was already a similarity between the two races, it assisted their hidden aims, in addition to these manifestly explicit sexual encounters. It was all part of a policy of subjecting Colonial women, along with other policies, to accept domination and paternity of Asia's Master Race. This included extinguishing Colonial Cultures and ultimately, languages, changing Korean names into Japanese and forcing worship of Emperor Hirohito. That the Japanese schemed everything down to the last diabolical detail, is without question.

There is, however, one important matter concerning sexual intercourse over which the Japanese had no control. Despite ample stocks of condoms being supplied from Japan, the brothels were forever running short of them – such was the Japanese soldiers' insatiable demand for sex. Such was the concern about venereal disease, which was rife in some areas, orders were issued by army doctors, that condoms had, where possible, to be used five times if stocks ran out.

There were a number of children born disease free but, there were others who came into the world mute, deaf, blind and with a limited life expectancy. They were victims of syphilis and were referred to as GPIs or GPH – meaning, general paralysis of the insane. These instances occurred when either a condom was damaged, the soldier would be drunk and refuse to wear one or, supplies of the contraceptives were exhausted. The most heart-rending and sickening conclusion to these infants' little lives – not that they had much hope, was for the unfortunate mother to be told by the brothel manager to 'either drown or suffocate the child'. In any event, the infants were not allowed to live longer than seventy-two hours. Such was the compassion of the Japanese army.

Scores of thousands of these raped and violated Korean woman and girls, suddenly found themselves free with Japan's defeat. Many remained in the deserted brothels for weeks not knowing where to go or what to do. They were destitute and in rags, some with infants who were starving, while other

females suffered the agonies of untreated venereal disease – many with gonorrhoea and syphilis combined. When they were originally forced into sexual bondage by army round-up squads or the Kempetai, they were either respectable young married women, or comely virgin girls, but now, being ex-brothel whores, their lives were shattered.

The Korean nation was not lustful or rampaging like the Japanese. Before being invaded by the Sons of Heaven, venereal disease was unheard of. Korean society as a whole was very conservative and frowned on promiscuous behaviour or sexual licentiousness. The Western world had long regarded Korea as a peaceful, inward looking nation with few outside contacts. Then along came Japan in the early 1900s, devastating, looting and raping in an orgy of rampant Imperialism and shortly afterwards, colonization. Korea never had a chance.

Nor did the ravaged Korean women. Trudging wearily through towns and villages towards their birthplaces or family homes, abandoned by their former masters, unwashed, dishevelled and clothed in rags, fellow Koreans turned their backs in contempt, knowing that such 'obvious women' had been whores to the Japanese. The pain these poor women and girls felt at being spurned thus, through no fault of their own, must have been soul-destroying and heart-breaking. Finally, when they did reach the homes of their kin, most were turned away as being morally unclean and, the worst cut of all, collaborators. More than a few, destitute, starving and diseased, took their own lives. This was Japan's legacy for which it must surely be answerable.

In some more remote theatres of war to where Korean virgins had been transported, the proclamation of surrender broadcast from Tokyo on 15 August 1945, did not immediately end their suffering. As if to compensate the fact that the glorious war was lost, Japanese soldiers patronized these 'brothel outposts' with continuing if not increased lust. Because of the multiplicity and isolation of intact Japanese garrisons, scattered as they were, it took some time for Allied inspection teams to arrive and accept the individual surrenders of these 'occupied areas' – POW camps were essentially their first priority.

In a number of instances, while awaiting the arrival of Allied 'peace teams', quite a number of peace violations and executions occurred – usually followed by the committal of *hara-kiri* by the Japanese officers responsible. There were some fanatic Japanese NCOs who found the pill of defeat too bitter to swallow. Not a few of them would have gladly resisted peaceful Allied re-occupation, taking just a few more European lives in one last fanatical *Banzai*. Fortunately, the Emperor's Proclamation prevailed but without it . . . ?

None the less, some Allied surveillance aircraft were shot down, even though peace had been declared. Never had the Allies encountered such an unpredictable or murderous foe. Clearly, the sooner the Japanese were disarmed, the better. In the meantime, the brothels continued their functions with a 'business as usual' fatalism. This sorry episode is concluded with two examples of Japanese bestiality against 'comfort women'.

The war was lost, the Japanese knew it, the 'comfort women' knew it, thus resistance by these unfortunate females should not have been unexpected. A couple of these girls decided that, with the Japanese defeated, there was no further obligation on their part to continue satisfying lusts of the soldiery. One of them escaped and took refuge within a damaged and partly submerged ship on the foreshore. The other girl fled into the tenuous safety of a coconut plantation. Unaccustomed to such defiance and with a war that was finished, squads of soldiers, still fully armed, set out to recapture these two brave girls.

The girl hiding in the plantation was found first. Sobbing and pleading for mercy, her tattered rags were torn from her body before, with pitiless zeal, being raped continuously. With lust satiated and considering that the girl was only 'a Korean' who had defied the will of Imperial Japanese troops, immediate execution was decided. Bayonets were fixed to rifles and then an orgy of savagery followed. This execution occurred on 29 August 1945. The world had been at peace for fourteen days. This peace-time atrocity was witnessed by two frightened islanders in concealment.

The body of the second Korean girl was found three weeks later - after a small Allied Peace Force occupied the island and disarmed the Japanese. A ship that was half in and half out of the water was boarded and given a cursory inspection. Its bow was submerged and resting on a coral reef while its stern was held fast on another coral shelf a mere eight feet under water. Within this ship's steering flat, at the stern, a considerable quantity of coiled mooring ropes were noticed. Then, a closer inspection revealed a horror unimaginable. The body of a decomposing female was found. The skin colouring was pale yellow and the corpse was assumed to be Asian. Both breasts had been sliced off, the abdomen slashed and hacked, and the body beheaded. If crimes of a sexual nature had been committed first, there was no real evidence because of the shocking mutilation.

Attempting to investigate this atrocity, the Allied inspection team came up against a wall of inscrutable silence. The Japanese soldiers to a man denied any knowledge of the murder, suggesting instead that because the head and breasts

were missing, the islanders, former cannibals, must have been responsible. Then too, ship's rats could have eaten the severed breasts – but not the skull. The mystery of the dismembered body on the ship was quickly resolved when two islander eye-witnesses revealed to the Allied Authorities, the manner of an execution they'd seen deep within a coconut plantation. Three Allied officers, led by the two natives, were taken to the spot and shown a shallow grave. Subsequently a decomposing female body was exhumed and despite the smell, closely examined. In all respects, the cadaver had been butchered in similar fashion to the body on the ship. Despite intensive inquiries thereafter, the Japanese soldiers responsible for both murders were never identified. A wall of silence among the hundreds of Japanese troops prevailed.

To rebuff the Japanese suggestion that the islanders were cannibals is imperative. Christian missionaries had been on the island for well over a century with the result that the natives had embraced Christianity with such fervour and devoutness that the Japanese accusation was ludicrous. As for the tragic end of these despairing Korean 'comfort girls', their deaths like thousands of others, went unpunished. On this island of Gaspan, part of the Palau Group, many dark deeds were perpetrated, with none better known than to the Japanese themselves.

Hundreds of Korean females who were forced to pleasure soldiers in Japanese brothels in outlying theatres of war, were so grievously treated, that it is impossible to list every example involving abuse of their Human Rights. For the many who died tragic and lonely deaths, they were perhaps spared the shame, humiliation and ignominy that befell the scores of thousands of raped Korean women in their homeland. To have been forced into sexual slavery and depraved bondage was bad enough, but to have borne half-Japanese children of such bondage, was reprehensible to the strict morals of the Korean populace. But worse, was the condemnation and fear of venereal disease that the Japanese introduced to Korea.*

* The Korean nation considered venereal disease in much the same way as leprosy. Therefore, it should be recognized, that it was this fear that influenced many family members to disown women or girls – no matter how closely related, who could have a venereal disease which they believed was highly contagious.

A COMPENDIUM OF MURDER AND HUMAN RIGHTS ABUSE

Following the bloody invasion and occupation of the Philippines by the Japanese, an all too familiar reign of terror and horrific atrocities ensued. In this chronicle, selected instances of barbarity and mayhem have been chosen from among hundreds committed, to example the mindless blood-lust of the rampaging conquerors.

The Japanese troops were a moronic characterization of both the medieval and the insane, with the dispensing of death regarded as their divine mission. Every atrocity carried out was done in the Emperor's name. It gave a sanctity and meaning to such murders.

Regardless of a civilian's calling, all of them without exception were subjected to Human Rights abuses. Let us begin with a New Zealand Catholic priest Father Francis Vernon Douglas, a missionary from the Order of Columban Fathers, who was working in the Philippines ministering to a large parish of Catholic Filipinos, when the Japanese occupied the country. This priest could have, for his own safety, left the country before the Japanese arrived, but he chose to remain with his flock and endure the evils of war with them. Following the capitulation of the country and for some months, he carried on his priestly duties as best he could. Inevitably, Filipino guerrilla fighters, especially the Catholic ones, troubled by the fact that they had killed the enemy in jungle skirmishes, sought confession and absolution from their local parish priests. Father Francis Douglas was one of them.

How the Kempetai found out what was happening, no one really knows. It has been suggested that a fake penitent confessed to the priest a fictitious mortal sin – the taking of a life. No doubt assured by the priest that he was fighting for his country and loved ones and that God's mercy was infinite, the bogus penitent received absolution and probably a penance to perform. If this

information was conveyed to the Kempetai then, the priest was good as dead. All that is known – the Kempetai seldom kept incriminating records, was that the priest was arrested and taken in for questioning. For days he suffered unspeakable torture including denial of water and food, but true to his faith and the secrecy of the confessional, he refused to reveal the names of guerrilla fighters who had sought absolution. Realizing that the priest was devout and that no amount of pain inflicted would make him speak, a decision was made. He was executed. The quiet unsung heroism of this Catholic priest is commemorated both in the Philippines and in New Zealand. A boys' High School at New Plymouth in the North Island of New Zealand, is named after him.

Another example of brutality occurred in Luzon and was as bizarre as it was repugnant. Fourteen Filipino resistance fighters were captured by the Japanese after they ran out of ammunition. They were tied neck to neck and with their hands bound securely behind their backs. After trudging and stumbling for three miles to their intended place of execution, they were allowed to rest while another group of prisoners from a different area were forced to dig round holes two feet wide and four and a half feet deep. When fourteen holes had been prepared, the neck ropes were untied and the condemned men forced to jump into the holes, then, with only their heads and necks above ground, the other prisoners were forced to fill in the holes and to stamp the earth down hard as they proceeded. Finally, their unenviable tasks completed, the prisoners were ordered to lay down their shovels and stand in a line, presumably to be counted. Instead the Japanese aimed their rifles and shot them. With one massacre over, attention was turned to fourteen heads waiting for decapitation.

Two Japanese soldiers had gone behind some bushes to defecate. Before returning, they scraped their excreta on to large banana leaves and stooping down to each head, offered the victims a last meal. All the pinioned prisoners could do was to shake their heads vigorously. The Japanese, amidst much laughter, crammed the revolting faeces into the mouths of the helpless men. With this amusement over, an NCO drew his samurai sword and with deft strokes, beheaded each man. It is known that this atrocity was never punished.

Catholic nuns also, were not exempt from Japanese barbarism. In Davao, south-eastern Philippines, forty-six Filipino schoolgirls were rounded up by a large detachment of Japanese troops and herded into a cotton plantation. There, in an atrocious act of mass rape, every girl and two Catholic nuns were gang-raped. Not content with this criminal act, later in the day, the same groups of troops forced an entry into a strictly religious Carmelite convent and, despite

the nuns protests that they were 'Brides of Christ', they too were gang-raped. Those of the nuns who resisted too fiercely were bayoneted or killed outright. To compound atrocity with tragedy, some of the raped nuns who were considered pretty, were taken away to commence service in brothels as whores.

Between 1945 and 1947, a number of cases of rape committed by the Japanese were reported to the authorities – especially the gang-rape of the Carmelite nuns, but seemingly, the War Crimes Tribunals, when they began to hear about the enormous number of civilian atrocities involving rape, could do little. They were burdened with case-loads of war crimes that had 'A' classification (priority), and could do little at the time, though the judges and the prosecutors must have wondered at the depths of depravity that the Japanese had stooped to. So numerous were the official indictments and civilian accusations that the courts could have been forgiven for thinking that they were dealing with an Asian nation 'that had gone mad'.

Making it difficult to pursue hundreds of accusations of rape was the fact that the Japanese occupied all their conquered lands in large numbers, and operating under an alien language and alphabet and all looking the same to the inexperienced eye, it was virtually impossible to track down the sex criminals. Most of them had been repatriated with name, rank and serial number unknown. Further a 'helpful' War Ministry in Tokyo in its closing days, forged thousands of false 'killed in action' reports. Not only were the Japanese formidable adversaries militarily, but in the field of cunning, duplicity and deception they had no peer.

It is poignant to reflect and saddening to point out that many victims of rape by Japanese soldiery never had the satisfaction of seeing rapists charged. A large number of these violated women were never compensated, nor will they ever be. They have died, taking their personal tragedies with them. In the meantime, the post-war governments of Japan, up to the present day, disavow responsibility or knowledge of millions of rapes and army-run brothels.

Against such a mass of recorded evidence, the Government of Japan cannot help but be impressed by the thousands of accusations, though, if the clock could be turned back thirty or forty years, and more victims remained alive, these accusations would number hundreds of thousands. It would seem, logically, that the sheer enormity of potential claims from rape victims, including the vast numbers forced into sexual bondage in hundreds of brothels, frightened the Japanese Government into paralysis by analysis. To admit government

responsibility would have set in train the largest barrage of civil claims against one government in the history of the world.

Invariably, wherever Japanese war crimes occurred, and providing there were helpless women available, the ugly word 'rape' became synonymous with the Japanese presence. Perusing pages and pages of documented Japanese atrocities, one has to catch one's breath. War crimes were committed on such a scale – both in volume and intensity, that one can be forgiven for thinking that the Japanese must have firmly believed that there would be no day of reckoning. In this regard, thankfully, they were disillusioned, but not before they had murdered, raped and plundered their way through Asia and the Pacific.

Japan's cover-up of 'Human Rights Violations' by its invading hordes, would have to be the most cruel and heartless act of chicanery and deception the world has ever witnessed. To continue denying responsibility for forced labour camps and the rapes by its millions of soldiers, is nothing more than an exercise in attritional polemics. Only when it suits the Japanese or if world opinion forces their hand, will Japan decide to concede that remotely, some 'unfortunate incidents' may have occurred.

The words 'attritional polemics' are not intended as mere semantics; it goes deeper than that. Japan has, by deliberate prevarication, dragged its feet for nearly half a century, over the matter of 'Abuse of Human Rights'. But true to form, steeped in artful deception, besides counting the cost, they know as well as we do, that for every month that passes into history, so too will the number of claimants who have survived thus far. This is called attrition.

The Japanese Government should be roundly condemned for this blatant deviousness and unwillingness to pay compensation for the crimes against humanity wilfully perpetrated by its Second World War Armed Forces. Knee-jerk apologies are simply not enough. They make a mockery of justice which is accountability. This book would never have been necessary if Japan had faced up to its responsibilities years ago. Japan should not wonder at the distrust and lingering rancour that exists against it. To this day, there are thousands of people who had the misfortune to come under the heel of 'Japanese benevolence' between 1942 and 1945. For them and newer generations of family members, they have difficulty in relating to people and things Japanese.

A LITANY OF HORROR

Between 1942 and 1945, 26,233 Netherlands nationals perished in the former Netherlands East Indies during the 'benign and benevolent' though unwelcome occupation of the country by Japan's Armed Forces. Relative to their small numbers as opposed to the Japanese hordes, the men from Holland distinguished themselves creditably against a foe who had no concepts of honour or decency. Brutality and depravity practised by the Japanese was met with courage and fortitude, and adversity with stoicism. War crimes, as the world was to eventually learn to its horror, were not isolated atrocities. They were carried out on a scale so vast and so unrelenting, that their bestiality and enormity shocked the senses. If Singapore could be considered equivalent to Christ's 'crown of thorns' then, the Netherlands East Indies had to be the cross.

Little is known to the Netherlands or the world regarding Japanese war crimes that occurred in south-east Asia and the dreadful suffering inflicted upon Netherlands nationals by the Imperial Japanese Army. Vicious brutalities were exacted against all Europeans including foreign nationals and with a perversity so intentional that deliberate genocide could not be ruled out. What follows is yet another example of criminal military behaviour that was neither punished sufficiently nor atoned.

After the Allied capitulation of East Java in 1942, some 200 Allied soldiers refused to surrender and become prisoners of war. They took refuge in the mountains and hills and helped by Netherlands and Ambonesian soldiers, formed themselves into groups of resistance fighters to combat the Japanese in guerrilla warfare despite the overwhelming numbers of Japanese troops. Predictably, in spite of their resolution and courage, they were all eventually hunted down and killed or captured by detachments of field Kempetai who showed no mercy.

Each resistance fighter was squeezed into a three-foot long pig basket made of bamboo and, thus confined, endured the tortures of the damned. Transported

on the open trays of lorries and beneath a broiling sun, the freshly caught prisoners suffered immense hardship with thirst being their greatest affliction. After long trips by motor transport they would then be transferred to an open railways goods wagon – still confined in pig baskets and refused water. Then, after interminable hours of rail travel, still under a scorching hot sun, or cooped up at night on some remote rail-siding, the train would finally arrive at the coast. By now, comatose with dehydration and unable to move their bodies the slightest inside the restricting pig baskets, the half-dead prisoners awaited their fate.

Severely wounded or injured by their captors and dying of thirst, the encased prisoners were taken by truck to a waiting ship for the final act of torture. No sooner had the ship cleared port than it was steered towards shark infested waters, then, in a final act of 'benevolence', the Japanese threw the baskets into the sea, within which the helpless prisoners either drowned or were torn from their baskets by ravenous sharks and eaten alive. This method of disposal of human beings provided a considerable amount of interest and entertainment for the accompanying detachment of Kempetai and the Japanese crew.

The only eye-witness still alive, lives in Ontswedde, Groningen, Holland. He remembers that along with his brother – both were boys at the time, seeing a long goods train stopped at Kalten station, Central Java. What he describes follows in his own words.

We noticed to our astonishment that some of the rail wagons carried a considerable number of bamboo baskets and that cramped within them were blood-stained and wounded prisoners of war with their knees forced up against their chins or chests. Because of the fierce thirty-eight degree sun, they were totally exhausted. The prisoners begged water from us but we couldn't give it to them, because the Japanese guards threatened us and threw rocks to deter this act of mercy.

What really made an impression on us was the fact that the prisoners – despite their tortured confinement, seemed to be unafraid of the Japanese guards. They yelled obscenities at them in the hope of being shot and put out of their misery. The awful plight of these prisoners is imprinted and will remain in my mind forever.

In a reflective aside, the eye-witness volunteered a privately held opinion.

Actually, I am sick and tired of hearing how civilized the Japanese are.

I know better! Japan has offered nothing in compensation these last fifty years. If the Japanese are that civilized, why don't they offer decent compensation, instead of waiting for the attrition of time or a conviction or order to that effect by the United Nations? Or, are they waiting for everyone to die?

That there is a growing back-lash against Japanese obstinacy and intransigence is clearly becoming apparent. Renewed distrust of Japan because of its continuing prevarication and deviousness, also suggests a total lack of contrition by its successive leaders for the devastating swathe of death and destruction created by its pestiferous hordes in the war that Japan instigated. Such perfidy cannot be allowed to continue. Japan must be called to account NOW! these Sons of Heaven have rightfully earned the name 'Sons of Hell'.

Returning to the Litany of Horror, the most harrowing description of the 'pig basket atrocities' was provided by a Netherlands Colonial police officer in his testimony marked, File 5284 at a war crimes hearing. While he was being held prisoner in Kediri during 1943, he personally witnessed the Kempetai place 48-year-old Laurens Thompson and a lower court official, Mr Rein Kouthoofd, together with some Ambonesians in bamboo pig baskets. Later, he learned from Japanese soldiers that all of them, had been thrown into the sea, still encased in these notorious pig baskets. The sea-area was identified as being off the coast of Surabaya.

An investigation in 1948, ordered by an interim Military Tribunal in Batavia, now Djakarta, did not deliver enough conclusive evidence – the Japanese had destroyed all records, thus preventing a just and meaningful investigation that would have warranted prosecutions. However, Kempetai Sergeant Masuzo Niida, admitted the veracity of the allegations concerning 'pig basket executions' when questioned in Melang, and admitted the validity of the charges laid against him personally. In a detailed statement, Sergeant Niida confessed to having accompanied several transports of Netherlands and Ambonesian prisoners who were confined in pig baskets for eventual 'disposal'. Most of the prisoners had been captured in the mountain area adjacent to Malang and were invariably squeezed into pig baskets for ultimate execution.

As often was the case, Sergeant Niida passed all the blame on to his superiors, Sergeant Major Ichiro Usama and Captain Hachiro Harada. Not surprisingly, after being counselled by a visiting Japanese translator, Sergeant Niida retracted his statement – claiming he wasn't feeling well at the time of his earlier

confession. General Imamura, Commander-in-Chief of Japanese forces in Java, as expected, also denied any knowledge of the 'pig basket executions'. He was later acquitted of pig basket atrocities and other alleged war crimes – for lack of evidence. However, though the Netherlands authorities showed unbelievable leniency, a subsequent Australian Military Court showed no such inclination. General Imamura was adjudged responsible for all the pig basket murders. His defence, that he had no knowledge of the atrocities, was plainly disbelieved. But remarkably, and in view of the heinous nature and gravity of so many murders, his sentence of ten years' imprisonment was extremely lenient.

Other eye-witness accounts, in File 5284 state how they saw lorries with prisoners compressed inside pig baskets and fully exposed to the blazing sun as they passed the parked vehicles on the streets of Surabaya. Other witnesses had seen baskets with bodies inside them washed ashore or, had heard villagers living on the coast at Grisee and Sockollo describe the screams of the victims, faintly heard, as the pig baskets were thrown into the sea – sometimes less than a mile from shore if carried on patrol boats.

In a sadistic twist, some baskets were thrown from the cliffs of Pasirian where, in pre-European times, religious sacrifices were once performed. The Japanese were not averse to trying every conceivable method of execution. The variety stimulated their murderous and masochistic desires along with their inherent instinct for sadism, and in this latter aberration the following is exemplified.

Police Inspector Piet Gallas, moved by the suffering of some prisoners in pig baskets, asked a Kempetai officer's permission to give them a little water. Unexpectedly, permission was given by the officer whose expression changed to a smile of consent. After administering water to the encased prisoners as best he could, the compassionate policeman was promptly murdered for comforting the enemy – despite the prior permission granted. Truly, the Japanese mentality was unfathomable. Indeed, the question of lunacy has on more than one occasion, been brought into contention.

An amputee ex-prisoner of war, a survivor of the Burma railway, didn't mince words when offering his opinion of the Japanese. He said, quote, 'Too much sex and in-breeding has warped their minds. When it comes to technology, they're damnably clever, but equally, when it comes to evil depravity, they could teach the world.'

The leader of the guerrilla groups around Malang Reserve Captain Koops Dekker with one Ambonese soldier, managed to elude capture by the Japanese and, happily, survived the occupation. Dekker knew about Japanese atrocities

first hand, but after learning of the proceedings conducted by the Military Tribunal in Batavia, and having observed ridiculously light penalties and other lenient actions by both the British and Netherlands Authorities, he, along with the Ambonese soldier, felt so affronted that they initially refused the Military Willems Order First Class that was awarded to them both in recognition of outstanding valour, despite the fact that the decoration was the Netherlands' highest military honour.

The 'pig basket atrocities' were not military acts, nor were they the actions of honourable men. An appropriate sentence of 'death by hanging' was not passed on one single defendant. In the main, light penalties were imposed on those few who stood trial. The majority of the war criminals involved, particularly the Kempetai, eluded the punishment by execution that they so richly deserved. They were good at executing and torturing innocent people to death themselves, but when Japan surrendered and it was their turn to face punishment, a good number of them simply melted into the defeated hordes of Japan's vast army or, were conveniently listed as 'killed in action'.

It must be kept in mind that though some major war criminals were punished appropriately, there were thousands of middle and lower order army and navy war criminals who eluded court trials and thus, punishment. The crimes that they committed were unforgivable and they knew it.

It is not the intention to blame the Japanese nation of today. However, in view of the reluctance of current Japanese leaders to confront their country's past bloody history, this book is intended to remind them that atrocities of such magnitude and enormity must be addressed in full honesty, and that deviousness and prevarication will no longer be tolerated by those who suffered grievously at the hands of the Japanese. If reminders of just some war crimes are necessary to jolt Japanese complacency, then these chronicles will have served their purpose.

Equally, the six Allied nations who collaborated with Japan after the war, deserve censure. Unmindful of the suffering and death wreaked on their own nationals by such a barbaric nation, they couldn't snuggle up to Japan quick enough. What price honour and integrity?

A German war criminal can still be prosecuted, but not a Japanese. They are heroes for conducting biological experiments in Manchuria, or murdering women and children and raping hundreds of thousands of helpless females and for all their other numerous inhuman actions. The Allies have not viewed kindly any attempts by aggrieved citizens who demand accountability from the Japanese. By suppressing atrocities committed by Japan, the Allies are contributing

to the myth of Japanese invincibility. By agreeing to a Treaty without compensation for mass murder and Human Rights Abuses, the Allies have not only suppressed but condoned Japanese militaristic excesses. Why?

The two instigating countries and mass murderers of the Second World War, are a match to each other but with one notable difference. One is still subject to vilification and strident reminders of its Nazi past, despite the fact that it continues to pay war victims substantial compensation – not just hissing apologies. The other instigator, is patted on the head and lives in luxury. What strange, if not surreptitious, deal did the Allies conclude with Japan when the 1952 Peace Treaty was signed? What nefarious conspiracy was hatched at the time, absolving Japan from all claims against it as the price for its co-operation and compliance?

These are serious questions that demand answers because if one cares to study the wording of the Treaty, there's a hell of a lot of give and very little take. One could be excused for thinking that it was Japan who had either won the war or at the very least, had negotiated an armistice or conditional surrender. The facts of history however disabuse us of this notion. Japan's surrender was absolutely 'unconditional'.

The worst that can be espoused is, that either the Allied politicians were drunk on sake or, the tenacious ferocity of the Japanese Army was so admired that, an alliance was struck allowing Japan rapidly to build up a formidable Self Defence Force as a counter to possible Communist expansion by both China and North Korea. There has to be a reason for such a 'Munich' style accord, but if this hypothesis was indeed one of political expediency and is proved correct then, wonder not at the total absolution this scurrilous 'Agreement' bestowed on Japan.

The fact remains that the basic 'Human Rights' of millions of war victims were sold for the political equivalent of thirty pieces of silver and to hell with those who laid down their lives in defence of their countries, or who endured unimaginable brutality and witnessed atrocities on a scale of madness that scarred their tortured minds for life. What other explanation is there for such a favourable Peace Treaty to be extended to such a former criminal and formidable foe?

A BANZAI OF MURDER AND REVENGE

Because of the sheer enormity of Japanese war crimes, this book would require 50,000 pages to list them all. In view of this insurmountable volume, every effort has been made to condense and collate just a fraction of notable crimes against humanity for the purpose of refreshing or for the first time revealing, atrocities of a magnitude and callousness that numbs one's sense of proportion.

Consequently, the following narrative is a ghastly one of sheer horror and murder, but before the chronicles of bestiality are closed, it is important briefly to analyze Japan's evil and racist war. For the first few months of Japanese mayhem, its hordes of troops swept victoriously through Asia and the Central and South Pacific. Wherever the flag of the Rising Sun flew, there also was misery, death and destruction. Like an unstoppable plague of locusts, half-civilized soldiers suddenly became masters of all they surveyed, with the arbitration of 'Japanese benevolence' resting upon the bayonet and sword.

Then, overcoming the initial shock of bloody invasion and occupation, the Allied Powers began to fight back against overwhelming odds. What turned the tide against the Japanese was the miraculous escape from destruction of America's Pacific Fleet aircraft carriers. Without them it is a foregone conclusion that Northern Australia, Samoa, Fiji, New Caledonia and both major Islands of New Zealand would have been seized and occupied. The warning presence of these carriers and their hundreds of feared aircraft, served to remind the Japanese that not only was the Pacific vast, but that extended areas of occupation could, by their very isolation, invite early defeats of too distant Japanese garrisons. This did in fact prove to be Japan's Achilles' heel, but in areas closer to the Central Pacific including south-east Asia.

By October 1943, Allied strategists in the Pacific decided that it was no longer necessary to re-take Rabaul by storm. Strategy would be served just as well, and with no military losses, by securing New Britain to the west and the Admiralty Islands to the north. These manoeuvres would automatically seal off

Rabaul which represented a formidable garrison of over 100,000 Japanese troops. As Admiral Halsey's United States Marines forged their way through the Solomons and sealed Rabaul from the east, General MacArthur's forces swept across from New Guinea and encircled Rabaul to the west and north, effectively sealing off Rabaul from the rest of the Japanese Empire for the remainder of the war. This huge island garrison was large by European standards, but as far as the Japanese were concerned, not an irreplaceable loss – its manpower reserves were equally huge.

Even earlier, during February–March 1942, the Japanese had gained almost complete control of the air throughout the Netherlands East Indies. Allied pilots found it difficult to cope with the Zero fighter, and the Japanese bombers were able to target Allied land bases and shipping with comparative ease and safety. The versatile Zero could fly at a speed of over 300 mph, had a range of 1,500 miles, was armed with two 7.7-mm machine-guns, two 20-mm cannon, and could deliver two 60-kilo bombs. With the Netherlands East Indies more than half occupied, the Japanese turned their attention south to Darwin, Northern Australia.

On 19 February 1942, the port of Darwin was attacked by 135 carrier and land-based aircraft flown by Japan's most experienced and highly trained pilots. The aircraft carriers *Akagi*, *Hiryu*, *Kaga*, and *Soryu*, under the overall command of Admiral Nagumo – who led the surprise assault on Pearl Harbour, positioned themselves south of the Celebes to an area east of Timor Island to fly off their aircraft. In this one air raid, 240 Australians were killed and 150 wounded. Shipping and port installations were hard hit and areas of the town severely damaged. Then, on 4 March Japanese Zeros attacked the harbour and airfield at Broome in north-west Australia. Seven aircraft and sixteen flying boats were destroyed in the fifteen-minute raid.

Some interesting facts. In the raid on Darwin, dive-bombing caused most of the destruction on and around the harbour. A 12,000 ton passenger ship, converted into a troop transport, and four other merchant ships were sunk. Three more cargo ships were beached. The hospital ship, *MV Manunda*, clearly identified with 'Red Crosses' was severely damaged and a number of flying boats destroyed. The shore end of the main wharf was hit by a 200-kilo bomb which killed twenty-one waterside workers and blew a heavy railway engine into the harbour, while at the wrecked wharf the *Neptuna*, fiercely blazing and carrying 200 depth charges, exploded with a mighty roar – later, parts of this ship were found a mile inland.

Ashore, the Territory's Administration office, police barracks and station, the postmaster's house and post office were completely destroyed. Government House and the civilian hospital were severely damaged, and an army hospital nine miles out of town, was machine-gunned. Darwin's two airfields were also attacked with a considerable loss of aircraft, buildings and equipment. In the following weeks, there were two more raids on Darwin causing more deaths and destruction and as well, raids on Whyndham and Broome. On one notable occasion, Zero pilots returning to Timor after a raid on Broome, sighted, some sixty miles from Darwin, a Netherlands DC-3, one of the last aircraft to fly out of Java and which was carrying a valuable consignment of bullion and diamonds. It was shot down and crashed into the sea with no survivors.

On 17 March, led by Lieutenant-Colonel Paul B. Wurtsmith, the first of three American fighter squadrons from No 49 Fighter Group arrived at Darwin and dramatically the position changed. Although the Japanese flights continued over Australian territory, they became little more than armed reconnaissances except for more determined efforts on 25 April, and between four consecutive days in the middle of June. At the beginning of August the Japanese predators were punished convincingly over Darwin through the skill of the American Kittyhawk pilots. In one persistent raid by the Japanese, they lost twenty-four aircraft for only nine Kittyhawks. Abruptly, peace was restored to Darwin. The Japanese never returned which proved a point as the tide of war began to favour the Allies and the aggressor began to retreat or suffer serious reverses, particularly naval. What had become noticeable was, that only in surprise attacks or when the odds heavily favoured the Japanese, did they triumph. When the odds became equal or favoured the Allies, the Japanese were no better militarily and indeed, suffered losses far heavier than one would expect.

With the battle of Midway won by the Americans and the Philippines and other strongholds wrested from Japanese control, the conclusion of a most bitter war was in sight. Germany had been defeated and now, the full might of Allied Power moved inexorably towards the Land of the Rising Sun. With or without nuclear bombs, Japan's days as a murderous warring nation were numbered.

Sadly, two of a number of Japan's last 'banzais of murder and revenge' – preceding their pending defeat, must be told. Both atrocities detailed were not militarily necessary, but they serve as examples of premeditated butchery that has no parallel in civilized history, other than the excesses of Japan's Axis partner, the regime of Nazi Germany.

Late in July 1945, a Japanese submarine took on board ninety civilian

prisoners from the port of Cheribon, North Java. They were all European and of both sexes with some children included. To escape the curiosity of local Javanese and to conceal its nefarious intent, the submarine left port the moment evening turned to darkness. Travelling on the surface and with an intent as black as the night, the submarine's commander compelled the captive passengers to remain standing on the casements while suggesting that they cling to each other for stability. 'He was,' he lied, 'taking them all to a prosperous and glorious Japan.'

So patently false and ludicrous was this assurance that many of the women and children began to sob. Murder it seemed, was going to be their more likely fate judging by machine-guns aimed fore and aft from the top of the conning tower and manned by obscure Japanese. Their fears were well-founded, but not from the guns.

After about an hour and gliding across the surface of a dark and silent sea, the submarine suddenly slowed. The only survivor of the carnage that followed was hauled out of the water and gasped his incredible experience to three Javanese fishermen. Missing, were his left arm and right foot, lost to one of a number of unseen marauding sharks. Confusing the simple fishermen was the fact that the survivor they rescued had been clinging to a half-submerged bamboo pig basket, a method of Japanese execution that they were well aware of and which they erroneously presumed had been their dying victim's unfortunate fate, but subsequently, they learned otherwise.

Being experienced in most things about the sea and hearing the slap of distant sharks and frequent splashes as they fought over torn and dismembered bodies, the fishermen were able to understand and piece together the fact that a calamity had befallen a number of people, causing sharks to engage in a feeding frenzy. This account is not complete because the survivor lost consciousness through loss of blood and eventually succumbed to his mortal injuries.

What is known is, that the submarine dived without warning and for no valid reason. The huddled groups of prisoners were not machine-gunned. The submarine simply slid beneath the sea leaving ninety people to their fate. By supporting each other and forming circles they were able to remain afloat and attempt to protect children in their midst. Then the sharks arrived and attacked. One by one, men, women and children were torn to pieces or dragged beneath the sea. Having lost a foot, the rescued victim desperately tried to save himself by swimming away into the tenuous safety of the night. A little later presumably, he encountered a ripped and shredded pig basket floating on the surface

of the sea. It was while he was trying to shield himself with its flimsy protection that another shark took his left arm.

Fearful at the consequences of returning to shore with the body of an European who was meant to disappear, the fishermen returned the corpse to the sea before sailing back to the coast, a little alarmed for their own safety – the Japanese did not like eye-witnesses. This massacre was reported to the authorities after the war, but because of lack of evidence, most naval files and shipping movements had been deliberately destroyed, the identity of the submarine and its commander, remained known only to the Japanese and, true to their evasive character, they denied all knowledge.

It would be feasible to opinion, that for every atrocity known there would be an equal number committed that were unheard of. We come now to an awful act of heinous barbarism. Towards the end of September 1945, Australian troops were trying to solve the disappearance of some 100 members of the Netherlands East Indies Army who, after fighting valiantly, were the last of a group of exhausted soldiers who had engaged the Japanese in fierce and bitter fighting. Wisely, against overwhelming numbers of enemy troops, the defending Netherlands soldiers withdrew from their untenable areas of conflict before eventually surrendering. But where, the Australians asked themselves, were these men now?

Eventually, the facts of the mystery became known. Following their surrender, they were disarmed and permitted restricted freedom and allowed to continue living with the local population. They were technically prisoners but living on conditions of parole that included daily forced labour. For a number of these soldiers, their captivity had one comforting side, they were occasionally able to visit their wives and children clandestinely in another part of town that was defined by the Japanese as being out of bounds. This arrangement was observed throughout the occupation of this particular area and until fifteen days before Japan surrendered to the Allies.

At 5.00 am on 30 July 1945, all of the prisoners and their families were rounded up and arraigned before a Japanese officer and summarily sentenced to death without cause or reason given. Amidst tearful despair by the women and children and bitter regrets by their menfolk, they were all bundled into waiting lorries and taken to Loa Kulu near Samarinda, Netherlands Borneo. There, the most frightening acts of butchery took place.

After being bound tightly and subjected to uncouth bestialities, the women were separated from their husbands and children and systematically slashed with

swords or bayoneted until they perished. The children, up to the age of fourteen, were spared such fearful ways of being murdered. The Japanese in their 'benign benevolence', carrying out this deliberate intent of genocide, seized the screaming children one by one and hurled them down a mine-shaft 600 feet deep. So exhausting was this slaughter under a blazing tropical sun, that tiring squads of executioners had to be relieved by fresh squads who continued the wholesale slaughter.

A Japanese army doctor provided medication for the perspiring and blood-smearred murderers as they collapsed to the ground exhausted. The butchery was conducted to a deliberate pattern which would cause the kneeling men the most distress. They were compelled to watch the execution of their wives and children which must have been an experience of indescribable mental torture before finally, they themselves were executed. With all the women and children dead, 144 men and boys were ritually decapitated, then, the Japanese completed their grisly work by gathering up the bloodied corpses and severed heads before flinging them down the mine-shaft to join the bodies of the murdered children. This shocking execution has been hard to describe, but it happened and in the telling would revolt civilized and sane readers. This mass execution and other atrocities must be revealed if only to prove that the Japanese were blood-lusting monsters.

Boys as young as fifteen were beheaded beside their fathers with no thoughts of pity by the murderous Sons of Heaven. These young lads were only twelve years old when the Japanese became their masters. For the past three years they had known nothing but the 'benevolence' of cruelty and hardship inflicted by the Japanese including being denied their right to attend school. Forced labour, deliberate humiliation, starvation and deprivation were all they knew. Perhaps, the 'benevolence' of being murdered by their Japanese masters was a suitable atonement for being born European and of Netherlands nationality.

It is not only reprehensible, it is incomprehensible to imagine scores of innocent little children being thrown down mine-shafts and to fall 600 feet into a black pit of death. Is it possible that some of these Japanese soldiers may have remembered the screams of little girls and boys and in abject contrition, confessed to their crimes. Seemingly not. This revelation of horror had to be pieced together by Australian soldiers after the Japanese were defeated. But one point is clear. Most, if not all, of these murder squads escaped punishment. The dead do not tell tales nor do they ask for compensation – fortunately for the Japanese.

One cannot help but ask. What drove the Japanese to such orgies of wanton murder? Was it because of inherent insanity? Was it because of a general inferiority complex? Or was it because of a racial obsession that the Japanese were the Asian Master Race? Whatever the conclusion, one factor stands out above all others. The Japanese held a deep-seated hatred against Europeans that prior to the outbreak of war, was only thinly disguised. We do know that the Chinese and Koreans suffered terribly from Japanese 'benevolence' and that the hundreds of thousands of murders wreaked upon these nations by the Sons of Heaven, were committed because the Chinese and Koreans resisted invasion of their lands and Japanese domination. But still, the question of barbarities and humiliation against Europeans remain unanswered. They were too savage and genocidal to be ignored.

Well-known authors and historians who have attempted to study the Japanese, agree on one basic conclusion that does characterize their mentality rather well. It is as follows.

The Japanese held a fatalistic outlook on life that was not helped by their relatively short experience of modern civilization. Ever an enigmatic race, skilled in the subtleties of deception, Japan stepped into the twentieth century from a long enduring medieval history of Bushido and Samurai beliefs that rather than being discarded, were incorporated into the progression of modern government. Despite being a naturally talented race and quick to learn European technology, the nation clung to old values and traditions, chief among them being the antiquated belief that their Emperor was a living God. Such a mixture of old and new values, grew into a cataclysmic force that one day, would have to be reckoned with. The culture gap, as opposed to traditional values diverse as they were, regressed inexorably towards the cult of Samurai that with its medieval and warlike history, boded ill for the world.

Japan's militarists had a natural love of war and all that conflict entailed. Within its borders and being so heavily populated, human life was not so sacrosanct as non-Japanese believed. Hara-kiri was considered honourable and not discouraged. Then, there was the fatal attraction of the samurai sword. It represented power and death, mesmerizing its adherents and representing all that could be obtained through militarism. Finally, there was the desire to possess the property of others. This could only be achieved through expansion by military means and the formation of a large army, navy and airforce. This, too, was attainable. With a huge population and complete devotion to the Emperor in whose name the drums of war rumbled, Japan

embarked on a course of conquest, first against its Asian neighbours then finally, its European.

Greed and envy of European culture and technological advancement along with its possession of rich colonies, was the undoubted catalyst driving Japanese ambition. Here then was the stimulus for hate and subsequently, a genocidal desire to rid Asia and the Pacific of Europeans.

It is hoped that the question of 'barbarities and humiliation against Europeans by the Japanese' has in some cogent way been answered, but one matter of deep concern still remains. Why, in the last few days of the Japanese war, did so many innocent prisoners suffer abominable and despicable mass execution? The time-worn excuse that such murders were carried out purely in acknowledgement of 'superior orders' is as offensive as it is evasive. Pursuing this question further and at higher levels, we come up against two significant and unhelpful factors that contribute nothing but frustration.

Either, where responsibility was proved, the war criminal received too light a sentence or, simply vanished into obscurity. Without any doubt it is abundantly clear that more war criminals escaped justice than the Authorities cared to admit. Admittedly, the sheer volume and horrific nature of Japanese atrocities were so numerous, that only substantiated charges acceptable to the prosecution were pursued, but even then, the atrocities that were brought before the courts, were staggering in number. So excessive was the unrelenting evidence of war crimes against the Japanese, that to contemplate even more charges where there were no survivors or eye-witnesses, would surely have doubled or trebled the work of the War Crimes Tribunals. Then, what about atrocities that occurred and were entirely concealed or for that matter, happened within the anonymity of the high seas where dead men told no tales and where Allied ships' crews vanished without trace?

The little children who were hurled down a mine-shaft at Loa Kulu in an act of cold-blooded murder by Japanese troops will never have their deaths compensated by the Government of Japan, nor for that matter will their murdered parents. All of these Loa Kulu war victims perished for one reason. The Japanese were facing imminent defeat and couldn't bear the thought of an European victory. Thus, while they still had the power to murder defenceless human beings, they did so without compunction or pity.

A few sombre facts. The total combined figure of American and British prisoners of war who died in Japanese captivity was 35,756 or 27%. In German and Italian prisoner of war camps, the number was just under 7%. The number

of Japanese prisoners of war who died in Allied captivity numbered 387 or less than 1% - of which 29 committed hara-kiri and 323 died in riots or attempting to provoke mass escapes.

Of 141,000 Netherlands nationals imprisoned by the Japanese, this number including women and children, 36,063 either died under barbarous conditions, or were executed in the most brutal way possible. Almost 26% died in captivity.

The Japanese deprived all European children of schooling for three to four years. (The period of occupation.)

Two hundred and twenty Netherlands girls were forced to work in Japanese army brothels and to pleasure Nipponese soldiers as whores.

Of the 190,000 Romusha's (Netherlands-Indonesian forced labourers for the Japanese), 180,000 perished in Sumatra, Borneo, Java, Burma and other places. Their tragic deaths were due to brutality, neglect, starvation and disease.

There were other deaths of a horrific nature, but due to lack of substantive evidence and eye-witnesses, the Japanese must be considered innocent in law.

THE EXPEDIENCY OF POLITICS: A POST MORTEM

Barely had the guns of war been silenced than the Cold War, a more insidious malaise, began. There was little love lost between Stalin and President Truman. A distrust of each other's intentions came with a cooling of relations that climaxed with the Soviet Union's enforced Communization of half of Europe. Stalin believed in the power of the State and control of production, distribution and exchange. For his part and representing the Democracies, Truman championed the Free Market and Free Enterprise and, of particular importance, free and democratic elections. Inevitably, with the imposition of an 'iron curtain' that sealed off puppet Soviet sponsored regimes, the former friendships of military expediency between East and West soured to a point where eventually outright hostility emerged.

Then there was Asia. No sooner had the Japanese been thrown out of China than Chairman Mao Tse Tung of the Chinese Communist Party entered into a full-scale confrontation with China's undisputed leader, Generalissimo Chiang Kai Shek. But strangely, a buffer country between China and Japan had been partitioned, with the southern half of the country being called South Korea and embraced by American politicians, while the other half, North Korea, declared itself Communist and was immediately supported by the 'Peoples Liberation Army of China'. To the east, but near by, Japan lay prostrate. Utterly defeated in its war of expansion, nuclear-bombed twice and occupied by American and Allied forces, a harbinger perhaps of its eventual change of fortune - which did occur beyond its wildest dreams.

Thus, a serious rift developed between the Western Powers and the Soviet Union. It could more easily be described as 'Communism versus Capitalism'. In this climate of suspicion and growing intrigue, coupled with the eventual triumph of Communism in China, a country with the largest population on

earth and now in a position to spread the gospel of Marxism by hook or by crook, the whims of fate smiled favourably on Japan. To the world's astonishment, North Korea attempted to invade the South but, by crossing the 38th Parallel, it invoked the concern of most of the free world and prompted the United Nations General Assembly to support the sending of non-communist troops to help defend South Korea.

North Korea was eventually contained within its own borders, and just to make sure that there would be no further military transgressions, a peace-keeping force was permanently stationed in South Korea. But of further concern to the world in general was China's invasion of Tibet and Fidel Castro's rise to power in Cuba and its subsequent Communization. Then there was another conflict still to come, between North and South Vietnam where Communism would once again triumph. Politically, America was encountering a succession of political reverses not just in Asia, but in Central and South America, and among newly independent African states – even including Egypt.

United States Senator McCarthy was the first prominent politician to wage a public war against Communist subversion within the United States, though ultimately more than half of his accusations against fellow countrymen were discredited. But Senator McCarthy had sown the seed of paranoia as far as Communism was concerned. American politicians could see what was happening across the world and with the powerful but Communist USSR, along with China's Communist hundreds of millions growing ever stronger, firm alliances with non-Communist countries had to be forged – and what better country than Japan.

Militarily, Japan was remembered as a formidable adversary and fanatically loyal to its Imperial Institution. Monarchies represented stability and were a strong buffer against the inroads of Communism. But, to snuggle up to such a former and powerful enemy so soon after its recent bloody history, required considerable diplomacy and a preparedness to concede much of what Japan might demand. In initial talks with Japanese leaders, prior to the country's return to self-rule, one can only draw conclusions from the obvious settlements that were agreed to in a very 'strange peace treaty'.

No doubt the Japanese may well have asked for the return of their former League of Nations mandated Pacific Islands, but in this regard no agreement was reached. But enough of supposition, instead, let us examine what is known about what this too-hasty Peace Treaty bestowed. First, the Emperor's status remained inviolate. Second, Japan was permitted to inaugurate and reconstitute

its Army, Navy, and Air Force, under the beguiling title 'Self Defence Forces' now the second largest consumer of Japan's National Budget??? Third, was the matter of War Reparations to the Allied Powers. In this respect, Japan was vulnerable because it had destroyed so much. The destruction of the American Fleet at Pearl Harbour being but one example. However, if the Allied Powers had pressed for the replacement value of every government facility destroyed, then the Japanese Government would have been faced with a War Reparations Bill that would have taken five hundred years to compensate.

Politically, to have insisted on Reparations would have crippled Japan, destabilized its economy, created civil furore, and introduced political instability of such consequence, that Communism would have swept the land and Emperor Hirohito from the throne. Clearly, this scenario was not in Japan's interest, nor for that matter, the Allied Powers'. Communism at whatever cost, had to be contained.

In the 1940s and 1950s, liberated nations of the world rejoiced at their restored freedoms. Newspapers published – for those who were interested, accounts of war crime trials that inevitably became litanies of repetition and reminders of a bitter war that many wanted to forget. As if to compensate and help erase the memories of such violent conflict, radio stations broadcast cheerful programmes and hurriedly promoted pop-songs that eventually succeeded in replacing the realities of depressing post-war news that included vivid exposés of Nazi horror camps, Japanese atrocities and an European Cold War, all of which the general public was in no mood to learn about. For many, especially former prisoners of war, so distressing had been their experiences, particularly under the Japanese, that all they wanted to do was forget, but not willingly to forgive. It was against this background that the Japanese were surreptitiously absolved for their past misdeeds and welcomed once more as a free nation of the world.

After researching newspapers of the day, the type of reporting concerning world events was axiomatic in its simplicity. Either International Press Agencies were quoted or, reference would be made to what general or admiral so and so had to say or, what prime ministers or presidents announced. In those far off days there was a singular lack of investigative journalism. The world news available was so vast in content that even a cadet reporter could justify his salary. What was supplied – even that which was learned from the BBC World News Service, was printed. Too often, press handouts were simply accepted, never questioned. It was in this climate of laudatory *laissez faire* that really important

historical issues were accepted in the manner of *fait accompli*. Besides, in those post-war and heady days, generals or prime ministers were never as meaningfully challenged as they are today.

Attention is once more directed towards Japan and the general absolution bestowed on it by the Allies. As stated earlier, in the matter of War Reparation Japan was vulnerable because it had destroyed so much. However, because it was 'politically convenient', Japan was absolved of its massive liability, but not only that, was propped up with American dollars that provided immense investment opportunities for free enterprise Big Business that started with leather-encased transistor radios.

To have been the beneficiary of such largesse as Japan was, seemed inexplicable to the world in general. But the world was war weary and in no mood to question the incomprehensible. A sublime reliance was placed in the wisdom of the Allies that was covertly assisted by the corruption of politics – a factor not generally understood at the time.

Steeped in the art of intrigue and fearful of Communism itself, Japan was only too pleased to comply with a 'Mutual Security Pact' offered by the United States. It automatically placated Japan's militarists – defeated but not silenced, and provided for Japan's rearmament albeit with the innocuous title of 'Self Defence Forces' – a cover more truthfully meaning 'US supported Anti-Communist Forces'. Correlated with this remarkable change of fortune was Japan's ability to construct and open factories within its own financial resources, despite the fact that its war-time economy had supposedly been bled white.

Japan's remarkable achievements since World War Two have been attributed to the slavish efforts of its obedient and disciplined work-force. In part this is true, but for a country to survive two atomic bombings and to suffer most of its cities being razed by fire-bombs as well as enduring a destitute economy following its defeat, begs the question. How did the Japanese do it? It must be remembered that most of its needed raw resources had to be imported, as they still are, yet in conjunction with some American aid, the Japanese economy took off like a rocket. How?

Earlier, specific reference was made to the vast wealth illicitly obtained by the Japanese Armed Forces during the conquest of the Asian mainland, the near-east Pacific, and south-east Asia. Areas of occupation where easy and valuable plunder was available for the taking included the Philippines, Burma, Singapore, Malaya, China, and the Netherlands East Indies. Scores of thousands of people were not only imprisoned but dispossessed of property, currency,

heirlooms and valuables. Then there were many financial houses and banks that were looted. The haul must have been enormous, but where is it all now?

It is not difficult to visualize the perspicaciousness of the wartime Japanese Government in this regard. After all, its ferocious war was not just one of expansion; it also included avarice and an entrenched desire for the property of others. As referred to earlier, systematic robbery of victims was commonplace and would appear to have followed specific army orders. The suggestion that a special government bureau was established to collect such amassed wealth should not be discounted. The Japanese Government had proved itself capable of committing every conceivable act of perfidy, therefore, the opportunity to indulge in a full-scale thieving orgy could hardly have been overlooked.

The best known instances of military burglary, more often than not carried out by the *Kempetai*, occurred at Singapore and in the Netherlands East Indies. Collectively, the vast fortune accrued, both in currency and bullion would have to represent a staggering total. Then there were accumulated amounts of precious stones, gold heirlooms, valuable paintings and antiques. None of the above have ever been traced nor has any compensation been paid. The plundered Siam gold reserves vanished completely.

That a huge hoard of booty was transported to Japan between 1942 and 1943 is not in question. Despite all records being 'conveniently' destroyed by the Japanese authorities at war's end, commonsense and sound knowledge that massive thefts did take place, demands honest answers from Japan. It is more than feasible that with such secret but ill-gotten wealth cunningly concealed from the eyes of the world, it could well have contributed a vital kick-start to Japan's economic recovery, and to this day helped economic expansion (instead of military) in other countries that were once threatened at the point of a bayonet.

Japan must cease being evasive and look within itself and search its conscience. Prevarication and the subtlety of deviousness do nothing but exacerbate the reprehensibility of wilful concealment. Indeed, the average person in the street can be forgiven for thinking that in Japan's case war, like crime, was a profitable venture and seemingly, that in the matter of military robbery and Abuse of Human Rights, there has been no accountability.

Governments, for political reasons, may waive Reparations, but this does not, by any stretch of imagination, imply or insinuate absolution for transgressions against Human Rights, nor do governments have this legal authority. Japan should not have to be reminded that it cannot continue to hide behind

the 1952 Peace Treaty. It is a flawed document as far as the humanities are concerned. This full exoneration of liability for war crimes is an astonishing fact of political chicanery that has no substance in International Law. Japan must surely know, as must present politicians who have succeeded the Allied politicians of yester-year.

It must be galling for those who were victims of Japanese aggression to have had to wait nearly fifty years for justice. In the meantime, flaunting prosperity, Japan's wealthy are emigrating covetously to lands that once their armies tried to take by force. City office blocks, hotels, golf-courses, tourist resorts, forestry, shipping and fisheries, and much more, have been purchased in foreign lands by ever-present Japanese expansionists. There seems to be neither conscience, guilt nor contrition in the Japanese mentality. On behalf of hundreds of thousands of murdered war victims, this book has been penned to remind the Japanese that they will never find full acceptance as a nation until past, but not forgotten, 'Human Rights Abuses' are addressed and compensated.

If war carries with it no material penalty – as in Japan's case, and where the aggressor was the loser, it must comfort other nations who one day may be so like-minded. Seemingly, the more brutal and the more murderous modern war may become, even if lost, the penalty such an aggressor will pay, will be ludicrous – if taking Japan's experience as a precedent. War should not benefit an aggressor and punishment should fit the crime, including full reparation and compensation. This is justice. This is accountability. Any other expedient has to be viewed as a travesty of justice and which a few death penalties cannot hope to expiate. But against this logic and if the corruption of politics hold sway, justice will forever be denied.

THE SCALES OF JUSTICE

On 6 July 1993, the Japanese Government submitted its desire to the United Nations Secretary-General Butros Butros-Gali, to be admitted as a permanent member of the United Nations Security Council. Supporting its request was the statement expressing Japan's opinion that in selecting a permanent member of the UN Security Council, due consideration should be given as to whether the potential member's political and economic influences were international.

What a cheek! Japan has spread its economic influence across the world in utter disregard of its moral obligations. These obligations should have come first and been addressed years ago. Specifically, a country that refuses to confront its past, and which deliberately deprives former war victims compensation for Human Rights Abuses, has no credibility. Its presence as a permanent member of the UN Security Council would be an affront to the United Nations Charter and an insult to the memories of so many slaughtered war dead and the few thousands of suffering survivors.

Before Japan is sufficiently acceptable to the United Nations, it must compensate its war victims either directly, or if deceased, their next of kin. Death should not provide an excuse for default. In 1952, it was estimated that the total number of people deliberately put to death by Japanese Forces, military combat excepted, was 660,000, of which 74% perished in Manchuria, China and Korea. Added to these murders were the 250,000 women and girls who were forced to become whores in Japan's Army brothels. Then, there were the victims of slave labour, tens of thousands of them in Asia and south-east Asia, and not forgetting incarcerated Netherlands boys in their thousands. The full total of victims who suffered Japanese brutality or death, exceeded 1,000,000 of whom 440,000 were estimated to have survived.

In 1970, and without one yen in compensation being paid by the Government of Japan, the war had been over twenty-five years, and by calculating mortality on the mathematics of probability including disease and war-induced

ill-health, the survivors had dropped in number to 310,000. Twenty-three years later (1993) the number of survivors dropped substantially to an estimated 90,000. On balance of probability – in twenty years time, the attrition of years will have reduced this number to less than 500 survivors.

How can a country have the effrontery to present itself as a candidate for high office within the United Nations with such a dreadful and unrequited past? The billions of yen and hard foreign currency that Japan has accumulated would go some way towards compensating its war victims or their families. It would be the honourable thing to do. With its considerable overseas reserves and investments – born of stolen blood money, some suggest – Japan is financially able, and has been for years, to meet in some measure its debt of honour. Regrettably, it hides behind an exonerating scrap of paper, claiming absolution for its war crimes and denying liability.

Such a lack of conscience and responsibility towards the fate of former war captives doesn't suggest sorrow or moral repentance. The virtues of compassion and regret are non-existent within the complexities of Japan's political leadership. Prevarication, arrogance, subtlety and pretence, attend Japanese politics.

A further example of this portrayal is no better exemplified than a most recent Reuters report from Tokyo, dated 8.8.1994. It was printed as follows.

'A Japanese Minister resigned yesterday after his comments playing down Japan's wartime guilt outraged Asian neighbours. Mr Shin Sakurai is one of a number of Ministers to quit after trying to whitewash his country's militaristic past. "I have decided to resign because I could not continue to cause problems for Prime Minister Murayama's Administration," he said when interviewed.'

China and the two Koreas angrily denounced Sakurai's comments which boldly stated that Japan had not fought a war of aggression during the nineteen thirties and forties. An embarrassed Prime Minister, Mr Murayama, who called the comments deplorable, hastened to apologize to avert a major diplomatic row. Mr Sakurai, a Liberal Democratic Party (LDP) member in the coalition Government led by the Socialist Premier, also declared 'The war led to the independence of captive countries, advanced education and increased literacy' – he must have forgotten the imprisoned Dutch boys.

Just as insensitive and outrageous was the statement made in May by Justice Minister Shigeto Nagano, who maintained that the 1937 Nanking massacre of Chinese by Japanese troops never happened. Two other Ministers outraged public opinion – one in 1986 under the Government of Mr Yasuhiro Nakasone, and another in 1988 under Mr Noboru Takeshita, for making similar remarks.

None the less, a spokesman for an influential Japanese right-wing faction, Mr Idekei Hanaya, supporting Mr Shin Sakurai's comments had this to say. 'The colonization of Asia and the Pacific by Europeans was brought to an abrupt end by liberating Japanese intervention. The sacrifice of hundreds of thousands of war dead to bring freedom to oppressed Asian countries should be accepted and acknowledged by the world. Asia and half of the Pacific now truly belongs to Asians. Thanks to Japan.'

One wonders who Hanaya meant when ambiguously referring to the sacrifice of so many war dead. Was it the murdered inhabitants of islands and countries brutally invaded by Japan? Or did he mean the invaders themselves? It is a worrying concern to learn that despite the passage of fifty years, such arrogant and unrepentant views are resurfacing. Seemingly it's just and proper for the Japanese to once more expand into and colonize targeted countries – such as New Zealand, North and South America and Australia, but wrong for Europeans to criticize Japan's resumptionist objectives of expansion or its past unrequited history. The Japanese mind-set and twisted logic is a hard act to follow and reveals an uncalled for lingering resentment – despite its past good treatment, that should not be continually ignored – must not be ignored.

Of further concern is the frequency of such provocative declarations emanating from the land of the Rising Sun. If it's not one Government Minister or radical spokes-person, it's another. But at least there are some Pacific and Asian Leaders who quickly denounce this insensitive propaganda, apart from New Zealand, United States and Australian politicians who maintain a subversive, almost frightened silence. This reluctance to condemn Japan's lack of conscience and arrogance may well in the future, bring its own unwelcome attrition. The danger signals are there.

The time has come to take the gloves off. Japan has to be strongly reminded of its moral obligation to address its bloody past. Patient and polite representations to Japan's leaders have done nothing more than stir its conscience to a point of irritation. But still it doggedly rejects responsibility for Japanese war crimes and adamantly refuses to sit down with former captives to resolve this vexing issue once and for all. With nearly half a century fading into history, it's not difficult to imagine the frustration of those who once tasted 'Japanese benevolence', to come to the conclusion that the leopard has not changed its spots.

Bitterness, resentment and rancour against Japan's intransigence will inevitably and forever translate itself into a perpetual distrust of the Japanese nation

as a whole, more so now that time is running out. The attrition of years will not only have taken its toll but, within a probable decade, the remaining survivors will be so old or feeble, that they won't have the heart or drive to continue their up-hill struggle. It's a sure presumption that the Japanese are counting on this progression of age, because they will be doing their sums too.

Such a cruel and calculating attitude by the Japanese should come as no surprise. One wonders if the word 'fairness' is included in the Japanese dictionary, though probable it is that the word 'deceit' has pride of place. A nation that prevaricates and remains obstinate in the face of historical fact, has no soul and deserves the odium of contempt that is steadily gathering momentum against it. Bowing scraping and hissing will in no way absolve Japan of its debts of honour, nor will lip-service apologies. But so intense is Japan's desire to be an economic super-power, that hindrances such as honouring the national expiation of war crimes are ruthlessly ignored.

EVIDENCE FOR THE PROSECUTION

I would like to point out that I did not experience the horrors of Japanese aggression or occupation, hence, I am able to document this book with absolute detachment though not with indifference. What I find most appalling about the Japanese is their persistent intransigence. In any Western court of law, an unwilling witness for the defence, would either be declared hostile or in contempt. Having established this parallel and Japan's reluctance to answer claims against it, one is left with the distinct feeling that this country holds such claims as Human Rights Abuses in contempt.

A defendant facing murder charges and serious accusations of Human Rights violations in a court of law, has the opportunity to confess or deny. On the one hand if guilt is admitted, accountability is assessed and justice dispensed. If, on the other hand, a deliberate silence is maintained and denials entered, then it is up to the prosecution to convince the court that beyond a shadow of doubt, the charges levelled are true and sustainable. Then a jury, after listening to the charges brought, and satisfied at the validity of the evidence, returns its verdict. Thus has the evidence against Japan been documented with but one apology. Ninety-nine per cent of atrocities committed by the Japanese have been omitted because of lack of space. Therefore, the reader is invited to remember the omissions when analysing the war crimes compiled and to assume the role of an international member of a World Court Jury, and to draw his or her own conclusions as to whether justice has been denied.

In this age of free expression and rapid dissemination of news it is surprising to learn that not only are the Japanese reluctant to confront their bloody past and discuss that dreadful era of history, but so too – though in a totally different way, are Western publishers and politicians. A clear example of differing opinions and their expression of what might be deemed acceptable for 'news dissemination or publication', is as follows. Recently, a national television station screened a documentary regarding previously unheard of

Japanese war atrocities. The following day, a local talk-back radio station was bold enough to accept callers views, and, or, experiences, relating to the Japanese invasion of the Pacific. The open hostility towards Japan was deep with no holds barred. Predictably, the radio station changed the subject of Japanese aggression to an entirely different topic the moment calls were received saying that the Government had sold its principles to the Japanese for thirty pieces of silver.

The interesting fact learned from this radio programme was the consensus expressed. The incumbent government was castigated for allowing Japanese Big Business to buy up a lot of the country's resources and land while ignoring the plight of people who had been maimed or brutalized by the Japanese during the Second World War. Clearly, the subject had become too touchy and was canned. Subsequently, a letter was published in a city newspaper decrying the ill-feeling towards the 'much maligned Japanese' and urging attempts at genuine reconciliation towards this former enemy. The letter to the editor concluded with the hope that Japanese immigration to the country would increase still further, thus helping to break down barriers of misunderstanding concerning the 'unfortunate incidents' that may have occurred during the war and ended by expressing the belief that many of the atrocities alleged against Japan were nothing more than Allied propaganda.

The phrasing of this letter with its familiar wording 'much maligned Japanese', 'genuine reconciliation', 'barriers of misunderstanding', 'unfortunate incidents', 'that may have occurred' and 'Allied propaganda', collectively, suggested that the writer was a well educated immigrant Japanese. The unfortunate editor received so much condemnation for allowing the letter to be published that he was obliged to print many refuting letters from irate citizens who answered the original letter with a variety of experienced home-truths. Chief among these was the opinion that the country needed Japanese immigration like it needed a hole in the head.

Then the local Japanese community stepped into the fray and bluntly accused the newspaper of 'Asian Bashing'. That what the letter-writers were saying was in essence true, mattered not, but the newspaper, aware of the public outrage, featured a supporting article titled 'The Asian Invasion'. Almost immediately the Asian community laid a complaint with the National Race Relations Conciliator, resulting in the newspaper closing any further correspondence that related to Asians, in particular, the Japanese. Here then, was the power of the Japanese - even in a foreign land. Their displeasure silenced the 'Press'

effectively and stilled the voice of public conscience. One must ask. Why are free citizens so scared of the Japanese?

We come now to apologies recently expressed by the Government of Japan, for the 'unendurable sufferings' of Allied prisoners of war in Japanese captivity. Apologies can only be accepted if they are sincere and meaningful and if they address all manner of atrocities and not just a selected few. As well, compensation rightfully sought for slave labour and bestial hardship must be offered, and should not have to be extracted through intervention by the United Nations.

On 7 December 1991, Japan formally apologized to the United States for its cowardly attack on a peace-time navy anchored in Pearl Harbour. It took Japan half a century to express regret, but so far as is known, not one yen has been offered in compensation. Then there are the atrocities committed against women and girls – forcing them to work in army brothels and become whores. Such is the guilt of the Japanese in this regard that an apology is still awaited, but then, such an apology would be an admission that Japan waged war on women and children, thus leaving itself wide open to Human Rights claims.

The Japanese are not stupid – indeed their forte is cunning, and besides, the shame of becoming publicly known as abusers of women and children would be a terrible blow to their image of cultivated charm and obsequiousness. Furthermore, the brothel whores issue would have to be Japan's deepest concern for another reason. So vast was this sex-slave trade, that an admission via apology, would open up a Pandora's box of claims for Human Rights Abuses quite staggering to the imagination.

Simply said. So widespread was the Abuse of Human Rights, covering every spectrum of the Japanese Armed Forces rampage, that follow-up claims for compensation against the Government of Japan would either bankrupt its economy or, would compel the sale or forfeiture of its assets abroad. But then, the Japanese would have brought such retribution upon themselves in the first place, and deservedly so.

In the matter of Human Rights, no government can conclude an agreement with another that in its intent, forfeits an individual's freedom to seek compensation for violations of Human Rights. This provision is clearly emphasized in the Human Rights Articles of the Geneva Convention. Thus, the 1952 Allied Peace Treaty signed with Japan is, in this regard, a worthless document. The Allied Governments now comfortably cocooned in a peace-time complacency, have much to answer for. Frequent representation to Members of Parliament or State Legislators by aggrieved constituents on matters pertaining to Japanese

atrocities are usually met with. 'Look, I'm really sorry, but there's nothing I or the Government can do. What occurred fifty years ago is past, besides, we signed a Peace Treaty with Japan in 1952, exonerating it from war reparations and all claims for compensation by individuals. Sorry, old chap.'

In one reported instance, an irate war veteran who had served three years as a Japanese prisoner of war and was forced into slave labour at a coal-mine in Japan, was given much the same answer by his Parliamentary Representative, but the War Vet - a bit sharper than most, was quick to reply. 'No government, not even a collaborationist one, has the power to tread on my Human Rights. That Peace Treaty is flawed. You know it, I know it. You b.....s have sold us down the river, and what was agreed with Japan in 1952 was illegal.'

Since this succinct conversation took place, it has been learned that a suggestion was made to the politician to endeavour to advise his Government of growing disquiet within organizations opposed to the exoneration clause of the 1952 Peace Treaty. Regretfully, the Government made all the right noises to this old soldier but, expressed its inability (unwillingness) to pursue the grievance on the War Veteran's behalf. Japan as always, came out the winner.

Clearly, the Western Governments are too afraid to offend a major trading partner like Japan to support their own soldiers who risked their lives in fighting Japanese military expansion. Paradoxically, Japanese expansion and colonization to foreign lands has resumed, but this time through the power of the yen. Seemingly, there's no stopping them. What they want, they get.

An imponderable enigma of the Japanese is their lack of conscience. Its leadership is not so naive as to disbelieve all the terrible atrocities committed by hordes of armed Japanese gangsters against civilian populations. They would have to know, but regardless and as bold as brass, they have put 'past incidents' behind them and set out to conquer the world economically. A nation with so barren a conscience and one that refuses to confront its past is a dangerous one indeed. Continued evasiveness by the Japanese must be resisted to the point where they are told in no uncertain terms, that enough is enough. To take account of Japanese war crimes chronicled in this book does not necessarily imply continued rancour towards Japan, but to forget these atrocities is to do so at our own peril. The history of war crimes must never be suppressed, if only for the sake of the memories of those who perished.

One of the worst tragedies that lingered on long after the Japanese had surrendered and which deserves sympathetic mention was the extremely sad and lonely way many Korean women died. Despised by their own race, turned

away by their own kinsfolk, diseased with gonorrhoea and syphilis, these ex-Japanese sex slaves were regarded as suffering from vaginal leprosy and avoided like the plague. Many of these unfortunate women scratched a living as best they could, trying with every guile to conceal their distress and advancing illnesses. For many, when death finally overtook them, usually in their forties, it was a sad release. Those women who could not afford medical attention, and most couldn't, suffered their quiet agonies as the venereal diseases, especially syphilis, ravaged their once beautiful bodies.

The legacy that their lusting Japanese masters gave them was a particularly virulent form of syphilis that was not helped with the contraction of gonorrhoea. Slowly their bodies withered at the same time as their limbs contracted and gradual insanity took hold. Eventually, not dissimilar to AIDS, they lost control of all bodily functions including a contraction of their lower limbs into a permanent foetal position. Then, crippled and dying, they developed total insanity before death mercifully intervened. Few of these women lived past forty-five. Abandoned, unloved, they perished as a consequence of syphilis induced general paralysis of the insane.

Dreadful facts such as the above would horrify any nation – except the Japanese. As a postscript to those tragic deaths, before these victims of war could be buried, their knee-caps had to be broken to allow the legs to be straightened out. Such was the 'benevolent legacy' of the Sons of Heaven. So long as the Government of Japan prevaricates over Human Rights Abuses, then fresh information will come to hand, such as the above which will brand the Japanese the worst monsters the world has ever known. Truly, the Japanese have an effrontery and defiance that confirms their callousness as well as confounding civilized sensibilities.

Oblivious to the suffering its armed hordes wreaked, the Japanese Government have the temerity to ask for a seat on the United Nations Security Council. With its track record? Never!

THE VAGARIES OF JUSTICE

It is a quixotic situation indeed when one compares the assessments of civil claims (damages) for injury or death, and those filed on behalf of war victims. The United States format for current civil claims is most revealing and should be addressed first. As an example: A citizen gets knocked over by a car as it moves away from a kerb. The injured citizen, now a potential litigant, is taken to hospital where, after X-rays have been taken, is discovered to have suffered a crushed foot and some abrasions. Two months later, and all but fully recovered excepting a slight limp, he or she sues for damages (compensation) and is awarded \$150,000 damages along with court costs. Some of these litigants receive even higher amounts.

War victims on the other hand are expected to accept peanuts by comparison. Most of them suffered harsh and cruel treatment, thuggery, starvation, disease, forced labour and much, much more, and covering a period well in excess of three years imprisonment, not a mere five minutes distress. Equated with the above, victims of Human Rights Abuses, including sex slaves and forced labour, should justifiably be awarded a minimum of \$1 million each, and if deceased, should have this compensation paid to their next of kin. There should also be a provision that where victims have died and their kinsfolk are unknown, such monies should be deposited in a specially set up 'Atonement Fund' in the countries of their birth.

Eventually, disbursements from this 'Fund' could be used to research a cure for AIDS as but one suggestion. The prime motivation compelling provision for those who subsequently perished as a consequence of brutal ill-treatment by the Japanese, is to ensure that the Government of Japan does not benefit because of the attrition of time. It is not a mere supposition, but rather a strong suspicion, that prompts this valid conjecture as far as mortality is concerned. Already, three-quarters of potential 'War Victim Claimants' are dead, and based on compensation for the living only, the longer the

Japanese Government drags the chain, then, so much less will become its liability.

Such a heartless conspiracy is not just a shrewd assumption, it is a most probable connivance of subtle purpose that only the Japanese would be capable of scheming. Therefore, to counter deviousness and confound Japanese cunning, as full a list as possible of 'War Victims', the living and the dead, should be submitted to the Japanese Government for compensation. Thus, the attrition of time that the Japanese are counting on, would be adroitly negated – to their dismay. This ultimatum, along with more meaningful compensation demands, would be playing the Japanese at their own game.

There are some who avow that civilization should have passed Japan by – including Admiral Perry and his fleet of black ships. But, whatever the configuration of human logic, it does appear that the benefits of Western civilization and its materialism have been responsible for much of Japan's chicanery added to which, the mysticism of its own medieval culture – forever remaining paramount, has contributed to the continuance of its inherent subtlety and deceit.

An interesting comparison of compensation fairness is described in the following analogy. The United States Government, shortly after the war, apologized publicly to Americans of Japanese ancestry who were interned for a period following Japan's sneak attack on Pearl Harbour. The Federal Government not only repealed past immigration policies, but paid 'internment compensation' – an amount of \$1.2 billion to 66,000 Japanese-Americans. It must be realized that these Asian-Americans were not in any way ill-treated. They were not forced into slave labour nor were they compelled to be sex slaves. Their living conditions were good, as was the food, and apart from having their freedom restricted, lived the life of Riley.

Clearly, the American Government had a moral conscience, something Japan sadly lacks, and compensated its interned citizens handsomely. Close to \$20,000 was received by each 'Internee' which, in those far-off days, was a lot of money. It is suggested by some that a similar amount should be demanded from the Japanese Government and pro-rata for each individual compensation claim. But, hold on. Nearly two generations have passed since this American payment. Time has not stood still. Inflation has sky-rocketed. What \$20,000 could buy in the immediate post-war years, would require nowadays, \$250,000 at least. There is no comparison.

Others caution that to demand from the Japanese compensation that is

equitably fair, would be beyond its ability to pay. But then, the Japanese should have thought of this when it unleashed its hordes in mainland Asia and in the Pacific. Compensation is not an exercise in polemics. It relates to accountability and justice for all those who were maimed, brutalized or put to death. Justice and punishment has to be seen to be done. As to Japan's ability to pay, it is one of the richest nations on earth with huge investments in other countries that were obtained in lieu of facing up to its responsibility of paying compensation for 'Human Rights Abuses'. Simply stated. Japan has the means, but not the will.

Another valid and important differentiation between America's generosity and Japan's unrequited responsibility centres upon two extremes of captivity. In America's case, the internment of American-Japanese was not born of genocidal malice but, rather, for national security reasons – no more, no less – and compared with Japanese prison camps, the internment centres within the United States were benign and administered with compassionate humanity. Not so were the Japanese prisoner of war camps. Cruelty, masochism, perversion, sadism, disease and death, accompanied their genocidal administration. It is an insult to compare American camps with Japanese ones and to regard American compensation not only as a precedent, but as a yardstick. Prisoners of the Japanese suffered dreadfully. This fact must never be forgotten.

Sadly, many Western governments whose nationals experienced 'benevolent captivity' under the Japanese, have developed conveniently short memories. They hob-nob with the new breed of Japanese expansionists with a zeal of collaboration that many war-dead would find more repugnant than their own beheadings. Japan stands on the world stage, cocksure and arrogant, supremely confident of the gullibility and collaboration of countries it once tried to invade. Sheer economic power has provided Japan with a political strength that has Western leaders in awe. What pleases Japan is the new criteria – not what is just and right. Do not offend Japan! is the byword. Do not assist, in any way, victims of Human Rights Abuses by the Japanese. Let them fight their own battles for compensation. At all costs we must not upset our business friends in Tokyo. This mentality is the precursor of political appeasement and is as disgraceful as it is despicable.

Were Western politicians more honest with themselves and more loyal to their constituents, it would not be necessary to question their patriotism. But seemingly, the attraction of Mammon, a source of evil and corruption, negates such simple considerations as political integrity or at least basic humanity. To

consort with such an unrepentant former foe is to condone continuing injustices that scream for redress. It's like getting into bed with the Devil and to hell with the consequences so long as trade prospers. Such politicians are unworthy of the people they are supposed to represent – particularly former victims of Japanese atrocities.

If governments were not so bedazzled by power and materialism, and influenced by 'Big Brother Politics', Japan could be compelled quickly to examine its conscience through the practical expedient of imposing trade sanctions and sequestering its considerable overseas holdings and investments. Such a recourse would not be without precedent as far as the recognition of Human Rights are concerned. South Africa endured such a boycott until its Apartheid Laws were repealed. If this United Nations action was good enough to obtain the vote for South Africa's Negroes, then surely, the same action should be taken against a nation that committed crimes against humanity – until it pays compensation. There should not be two laws or double-standards as far as the United Nations is concerned.

Her Majesty Queen Beatrix who visited Japan on a State Visit in October 1992, was moved to declare that a 'Deep Gulf' still divided the two countries because of Japan's detention in the Netherlands East Indies (now Indonesia) of more than 10,000 Netherlands nationals who were 'marked for life by their experiences'. It was a meaningful statement by the Queen. (One wonders if Her Majesty knew about the 'pig basket executions', but presumably, the Japanese probably bowed, scraped and hissed, and thought nothing more about the Royal admonition.) At least the Netherlands Queen had the courage to remind the Japanese of their past cruel history, which is more than can be said for other visiting Heads of State whose subjects were treated with equal barbarity. For them, the dictum that 'Silence is Golden' applied.

It has been seriously suggested – and it has much merit, that where mass executions or civilian slaughters occurred, memorial monuments of granite with bronze name-plates affixed, should be built on the site of every known Japanese massacre and that the Government of Japan foot the bill. This suggestion is practical, except for the compelling consideration so far as 'atrocities sites' are concerned. China and Korea, but two examples, would become known as the lands of 'murder monuments', because they would have to be erected in their thousands. Perhaps one magnificent monument in marble and bronze, recording all the murder sites, could be erected in every country or islands that suffered the 'Scourge of the Samurai'. There would still be a considerable number of

monuments because, like locusts, the Japanese were everywhere including the little known Andaman Islands and the tiny Pacific Island of Tarawa where twenty-two British subjects, seventeen of them New Zealanders, were wilfully murdered in a bestial orgy of beheadings.

Most nations have a tomb dedicated to an unknown soldier, while others have monuments and cenotaphs erected in memory of the fallen. What more fitting way to atone – in part, for the massacre of defenceless people – none of whose families have been compensated.

COMPENSATION: THE EUROPEAN WAY

The Federal Republic of Germany has worked hard during the past thirty years to make amends for the human misery and suffering visited upon millions of innocent people through the barbaric excesses of the Second World War National Socialist Regime headed by Dictator Adolf Hitler. Recently the German Government produced extensive material describing its efforts directed at alleviating the suffering of those inside and outside Germany, either because they were considered politically opposed to the Nazis or, simply because they were Jews. Another objective considered a priority and dating back to 1952, was the intent to make restitution for the crimes perpetrated by the National Socialists, an undertaking considered a most important and urgent obligation of the reconstituted German Parliament on behalf of the nation.

One of the first acts of the Federal Republic of Germany in 1952 was to reiterate election pledges guaranteeing compensation to victims of Nazi persecution. Subsequently, on 1 October 1953, a Supplementary Federal Law for the Compensation of the Victims of National Socialist Persecution was enacted. Then, on 29 June 1956, it was followed by a broadened concept of compensation, not by amendment, but through the introduction of a revised Federal Law for the Compensation of the Victims of National Socialist Persecution and entered as the *Bundesentschädigungsgesetz* – or BEG, which greatly expanded the effectiveness of the 1953 law in favour of those receiving compensation. A Final Federal Compensation Law was passed on 14 September 1965, to expand the number of persons eligible for compensation and to further improve the assistance offered.

The 'BEG' laws were intended to compensate those persecuted for political, racial, religious or ideological reasons, particularly people who suffered physical injury or loss of freedom, property, income, or professional and financial advancement as a consequence of Nazi persecution. In addition to racial and

political victims of the Third Reich, the revised law included compensation for artist and scholars whose works disagreed with National Socialist doctrine. So embracing was this enlightened legislation, it also provided compensation for people who were persecuted merely because they were related or friendly with victims of the Nazis. Finally, the law guaranteed compensation to the survivors of deceased victims.

As if this revised law not enough, provision was also made for lump-sum payments to former concentration camp internees who were the objects of 'medical experimentation' by Nazi doctors. Included, was provision for lump-sum payments to Palestinian prisoners of war who, due to their Jewish background, did not receive humane treatment guaranteed to all prisoners of war by the provisions of International Law.

Between 1959 and 1964, the Federal Republic of Germany negotiated 'Global Agreements' with eleven European nations, identified in the following 'Disbursement Schedule'. As a result of these agreements, the Federal Republic assumed the financial obligations of paying almost DM 900 million – an enormous sum, to these countries; thus enabling them to compensate war victims not eligible under the Federal 'BEG', but who none the less were entitled to damages incurred as victims of National Socialist Policy. If deceased, their survivors became eligible for the compensation payable.

The following were the disbursements made to the eleven countries within the 'Global Agreement' by the Federal Republic of Germany.

<i>Country</i>	<i>Date of Agreement</i>	<i>Million DM</i>
Luxembourg	11 July 1959	18
Norway	7 August 1959	60
Denmark	24 August 1959	16
Greece	18 March 1960	115
Holland	8 April 1960	125
France	15 July 1960	400
Belgium	28 September 1960	80
Italy	2 June 1961	40
Switzerland	29 June 1961	10
United Kingdom	9 June 1964	11
Sweden	3 August 1964	1
	TOTAL	876

By 31 December 1986, the Federal Republic of Germany and the individual German States had paid more than DM 78 billion in restitution and compensation to victims of the National Socialists regime. The following table itemizes the individual amounts. It is estimated that a further DM 23.9 billion will be disbursed for the same purpose by the year 2000, increasing the sum total to approximately DM 102 billion.

Public expenditure in restitution for Nazi damages in billion DM (as of 1 January 1988).

<i>Expenditures thus far</i>	<i>Billion DM</i>
Compensation of victims 'BEG'	63.032
Restitution for lost property 'BRUG'	3.928
Israel Agreement	3.450
Global Agreements with 12 Nations including Austria	1.000
Other (Civil Service & Miscellaneous)	6.800
Payments based on State Regulations	1.855
Final restitution in special cases	0.499
TOTAL	80.564
 <i>Estimated future expenditure</i>	
Compensation of war victims 'BEG'	19.346
Restitution for lost property 'BRUG'	0.322
Other (Civil Service & Miscellaneous)	2.300
Payments based on State Regulations	0.080
Final restitution in special cases	0.041
SUB TOTAL	22.089
 Estimated Total	
Compensation of all victims 'BEG'	82.378
Restitution for lost property	4.250
Israel Agreement	3.450
Global Agreements with 12 Nations including Austria	1.000
Other (Civil Service & Miscellaneous)	9.100
payments based on State Regulations	1.935
Final restitution in special cases	0.540
FINAL TOTAL	102.653

As stated in the German documentation, it is the position of the German Government that: '... no matter how large the sum, no amount of money will ever suffice to compensate National Socialist persecution'. In this acknowledgement, the Federal Republic of Germany, its Western Allies and responsible independent organizations have always concurred. It is more than apparent that in dealing with the legacy of the Third Reich regime, the Federal Republic of Germany has established a compassionate precedent: namely that of legislating and carrying out a comprehensive system of restitution for injustice. (Japan should take note.) It is interesting to recognize as well that the 'BEG' legislation has extended far beyond its original responsibility. To the current date, approximately 40% of those receiving compensation reside in Israel, 20% are domiciled within Germany, and 40% live in other countries.

It is also commendable that in 1981 the Bundestag agreed to grant a further DM 100 million for payments to non-Jewish victims of the Nazi regime in cases similar to the provisions mentioned in the schedule of disbursements. The history of Adolf Hitler's Germany strongly supports a parallel Japanese responsibility. It is notable that the Germans themselves, without any outside pressure, faced this massive moral responsibility while in the midst of clearing away bombed bridges and destroyed cities. Internal reconstruction was one of its urgent top priorities, but so too was its national and moral obligation to alleviate the suffering of scores of thousands of war victims. In the matter of compensation, honourably acknowledged, Germany could never be called a 'Nation of Shame'.

As stated, 80% of compensated Nazi war victims live outside Germany, but the Federal Republic has not used this non-residence circumstance as a ploy to avoid paying compensation – more to its credit. It has proceeded with its responsibilities honourably and well. Bearing this in mind, it would be irrelevant and devious for the Japanese to seize upon a residence clause, within Japan, as an excuse to avoid paying compensation. But conversant with Japanese guile, one would not dismiss this possible pretext lightly. However, Germany has established a precedent of compensating war victims who live in other countries that Japan can hardly ignore – much as it would like to.

There is consistent reference to 'victims' in the German legislation which, in general terms, is meant to specify those who were incarcerated in concentration camps, forced to work as slave labour, deprived of human rights – especially civilian internees, brutalized, maimed, tortured, used for medical experiments or executed. As Japan practised all these abominations with even

greater ruthlessness, it will be expected to adopt the scope and provision of the German legislation. It is wholly untenable for the Japanese to claim that they do not bear a similar responsibility or moral and legal obligation under International Law. Abuse of Human Rights will, more than anything, be their Achilles' heel as, unlike Germany, Japan went one step further in its wartime litany of horror by waging war on women and allowing its hordes to repeatedly rape and imprison scores of thousands of unwilling females. It must answer for this.

The United Nations Commission on Human Rights has an obligation to investigate Japan's wartime atrocities in lieu of any compensation being paid. The world demands no less. The time for diplomacy and sweet talk is past. Japan's conscience and its frustrating prevarication must be challenged forcibly. It does seem that confrontation and a no-nonsense approach is the only persuasion that will contest its wilful obstinacy. Every other approach up until the present time has been met with delaying tactics and duplicity.

The crimes of the Third Reich have been salved to a considerable extent by the generous and voluntary compensation payments made by successive democratic governments, and in this regard, the Federal Republic of Germany should be congratulated. Not so Japan. It has expiated none of its atrocities, preferring instead and for selfish reasons, to once again expand its influence and Empire wherever opportunity exists. There are major Japanese holdings in First World and some Second World countries that represent tremendous wealth. Not only that, thousands of Japanese are streaming to many lands, expanding their investments and colonizing as they go. What the Japanese military failed to achieve, the economists fulfilled.

Germany, on the other hand, could have expanded likewise but opted to meet its huge moral obligations first – which has to be admired, and because of this dedication, it has been prevented from establishing economic power bases in foreign lands on the massive scale embarked upon by Japan whose medieval philosophy has been 'to hell with the compensation claims by these war survivors, we should have murdered them all'. This seems to be their chief regret. Perhaps the Japanese wartime supremacy adage is as strong as ever: 'Japan, Number One, the rest of the world, Number Ten'. The way Japan can so easily ignore the massacres and suffering it caused to so many during its war of Imperialist expansion suggests that it has no soul.

Still concerned with money and compensation, it is appropriate to refer briefly to the matter of looting that has scarcely been mentioned. In the long list of criminal actions committed by the Japanese in their war of expansion,

thieving is not mentioned. They were the most efficient plunderers in history and left the Germans for dead. A few examples out of scores of thousands, should serve to inform what really went on.

Robbery was not just the exclusive preserve of the military Kempetai. The Japanese Armed Forces got into the act of thieving and looting as opportunities presented – and they were many. People with wristlet or pocket watches and expensive-looking gold rings, usually Europeans or prosperous Chinese, would be stopped in the street and forced to give Japanese soldiers – at the point of a bayonet, such valuables. To resist this highway robbery would have been to invite instant death – usually by bayoneting. So long as the Japanese carried rifles with fixed bayonets or wore evil-looking samurai swords, they represented not only the Imperial Japanese Army, but something just as depraved – criminal gangsterism. If they weren't robbing or thieving they were raping. There was no end to their uncivilized behaviour.

Singapore, the city of the lion, was known by another name by the Japanese stationed there. It was gleefully referred to as the city of gold. And no wonder. The houses of Chinese, mostly of middle-class and prosperous background, would be looted by the Kempetai during a thorough search. Thousands of residences would be plundered in this manner, yielding fortunes in precious stones, currency and gold, but the robbery did not stop there. As their owners and thousands of other Chinese were dispossessed, so too at designated areas were they beheaded. But this disgraceful barbarism did not stop with murderous executions: it went further. Pitiless and hard-hearted Japanese troops would pick up severed heads and examine their mouths. In many instances, solid gold teeth and fillings would be discovered. This would be the signal to grasp their combat knives and to gouge the gold from out of the mouths. If the task proved difficult, moronic soldiers would place the head on the ground face up and smash the gold loose with a blow from a rifle butt. Presumably, these pickings did not end up in the Kempetai treasury – earmarked for Japan, but instead, were added to the individual soldier's accumulating hoard.

Tragedy and heartbreak attended thousands of dispossessions, none more soul-destroying than that experienced by European families in the former Netherlands East Indies. There were about 250,000 European households throughout the territory, and every one was systematically plundered after their owners had been imprisoned or executed. The Japanese stole everything of value and confiscated in the name of the Imperial Army property that included cars, horses, plantation buildings, machinery, launches and pleasure boats,

clothing, shoes, cooking utensils, sterling silver, crystal, paintings, heirlooms, jewellery, other valuables and money. Like locusts they stripped tens of thousands of houses bare. Watches and rings were snatched from the dead, and Netherlands nationals in captivity were forced to hand over their wallets, watches and rings without exception.

A quarter of a million households in just one Japanese occupied territory, must have yielded a staggering haul of tremendous wealth. None of it was recovered and nobody has ever mentioned it. Of course, the Japanese Government will deny all knowledge of the wholesale thieving as strongly as they did the infamy of the sex-slave brothels, but many a ship sailed to Japan with special security and 'valuable cargoes'. So now the question remains. Where is the plunder invested? Could it have found its way to countries like Australia and New Zealand where the Japanese have a strong economic presence? Though it would be a callous act to invest such plunder in the very countries that Japan once tried to invade. Furthermore, such initial thieving and on such a well organized and considerable scale begs the question. What about compensation for such massive robberies? This was a criminal, not a war activity. The Federal Republic of Germany has made provision for 'restitution of lost property' through legislation in its Bundestag. Japan should do no less! It should not and must not remain devious forever.

Until the issue of Japan's war responsibilities are resolved unwelcome enmity towards Nippon from all around the world will continue to grow as countries learn of its blatant disregard for past Human Rights Abuses. Inevitably, in the struggle for rightful compensation by its former war victims, the pages of history that would otherwise remain closed, will be opened, revealing what these chronicles in part express. If odium and contempt resurfaces, then it will be as a consequence of Japan's own obstinacy. It has had fifty years to make amends - like Germany, but still it resists. It will have only itself to blame if civilized nations begin to regard the Japanese with suspicion.

POLITICS — LAW — AND EVASION

Where there is a paucity of contrition, and there is defiance instead of remorse, litigation is cast in the role of challenging argument — the play-thing of semantics. Seemingly, human conflict does not end when the guns cease firing, or so it appears where Japan is concerned. It has adopted a schizophrenic mentality singularly characterized by its abhorrent conduct of war and its artful evasiveness if not downright deception during its recovery as a defeated nation. How can justice prevail if every expedient of prevarication and premise of falsity is employed? The Japanese have a well earned reputation for duplicity and guile that observers might more correctly interpret as either deceit or treachery. Be that as it may, at least one fact can be declared unchallengeable. Japan's leaders are noticeably careless of the truth.

For nearly fifty years Japan has either denied or down-played numerous war atrocities that have come to general attention. Such wilful intransigence — without any offer to make amends, hardens one's perception of the nation as a whole. Let us examine the matter of Japanese Army brothels and the enforced conscription of 250,000 sex slaves. Enough has been said about such depravity and its tragic human consequences, but scant attention has been given to the arch-perpetrators of such a disgusting and uncivilized aberration of war. The Japanese penchant for denying anything unfavourable has tested their credibility repeatedly but none more dramatically, than the revelations of captive brothel whores. For years the Government of Japan has denied all knowledge of wrong-doing by its Armed Forces but now, clear and irrefutable evidence has come to light that reveals yet another 'big lie'. Worse is the complicity by the Japanese Government in the establishment of army-run brothels.

After years of denial, a researcher decided to test the sincerity of Japan's protestation of innocence. He gained access to the Defence Ministry's library and, not surprisingly, found a wealth of information relative to 'Imperial Army Brothels' within ten minutes of searching. Being an honest man, he placed this

indisputable evidence before the appropriate authorities and advised fellow historians. This much-sought-after confirmation was discovered on 10 January 1992 — half a century after the American Fleet was wiped out at Pearl Harbour.

That a country could knowingly subvert its own history and continually deny such a fiendish atrocity until the truth was revealed, quite staggers the imagination. But here the critique was one of deception without exception. Bald-faced lies were the stock-in-trade. How then to surmount such chicanery? With such an irrefutable exposé, it makes all other allegations of war atrocities against Japan the more believable. Perhaps the saddest outcome of such revelations is the opening up of deep wounds and bitter memories that will refuse to heal until Japan honestly confronts its past, as did the Federal Republic of Germany. Nations who ignore their history are condemned to repeat it, and Japan is no exception. Indeed, its predilection to secretiveness and subtlety predisposes this philosophy as a potential likelihood unless it squarely faces up to its unsavoury past.

There are good people in Japan, but they are powerless against the influence of militarists who, though discredited, still wield an influence that however surreptitious, is plainly discerned as having paralysed the Japanese Government in matters relating to war atrocities committed by the Japanese Armed Forces — particularly the Army. It would be a valid premise to assume that because of the countless dishonourable acts committed by the Japanese Army, the Government's ambivalence and procrastination regarding its responsibilities towards victims of Human Rights Abuses is, in no small measure, influenced by the dogmatism of the militarists. Defeat might well have chagrined the Army but not stilled its voice.

Procrastination, summed up both the attitude and reaction of the Japanese Government when it could not longer deny the disgrace of army run brothels and all the Human Rights Abuses attendant. In a desperate attempt to minimize both Army and Government culpability, it was announced on 6 July that 'no evidence had been found to incriminate the Imperial Army authorities in forcing anyone to provide "comfort services".' For the many thousands of surviving 'conscripted whores', this innocuous blandishment was the last straw. It enraged their feeling to such an extent that, despite the shame, they came forward with searing accounts of having been kidnapped and held in brothels, where they were constantly raped. The Japanese Government had held an 'investigation of sorts' preceding its announcement, but did not anticipate such

a vitriolic response. Perhaps to its regret, the earlier inquiry had relied exclusively on Japanese written records and where no interviews were conducted.

Nevertheless, the fires of attrition had been stoked, and what had been contained as a deep dark secret, even from the War Crimes Tribunals, was now out in the open. It heightened public awareness of a particularly grim chapter from Japanese wartime history, and confirmed that Japan's military had descended to the depths of depravity in every aspect of barbarism. The blame for the forcing of helpless women and girls to become unwilling whores to Japanese troops, was now laid squarely at the door of the Army and Government.

Japanese Prime Minister Miyazawa, attempting to assuage protest, but only to protect the Government from compensation claims, maintained that any claims for Human Rights Abuses from individuals had already been settled under the 1965 Japan-Korea Treaty. Then, Chief Cabinet Secretary Kato Koichi, promised only that the Government would consider 'taking other measures in lieu of monetary recompense'. As if anticipating such cunning evasiveness, several 'comfort women' former unwilling whores, from both North and South Korea, petitioned the United Nations Sub-commission on Prevention of Discrimination and Protection of Minorities to investigate their grievances.

The UN Sub-commission asked Netherlands scholar Theo van Boven, an expert on international law and human rights, to prepare a report on the issue by the summer of 1993. Conducive to this request, but independently, civic groups and the Japan Federation of Bar Associations held a conference on 9 December in Tokyo, to which van Boven was invited along with other United Nations officials. The organizers of the conference had a twofold purpose. First, they wanted the sub-commission staff and researchers from concerned non-governmental organizations to hear personal testimony first-hand. Those recounting their experiences included North and South Koreans, Filipinos, and others who had been forced to pleasure Japanese soldiers in numerous brothels that had been set up everywhere. Male Koreans who had been conscripted against their will into the Japanese Army as well as Korean labourers who had been brought to Japan unwillingly, were also heard.

The conference organizers sought advice from the UN experts on historical precedents and principles of international law relevant to demands for compensation from Japan in the hope of forcing the Government to respond. One important tenet discussed at the symposium was *jus cogens* – from the Latin meaning, 'compelling law'. *Jus cogens* was defined in the 1969 Vienna Convention on the Law of Treaties as a 'pre-emptory norm of general international

law'. The principle being that Human Rights are universal and that 'treaties violating them' have no legal force. Thus, governments who enter into such agreements sanctioning, for example, past genocide or slave trade will have acted improperly and to the conclusion, that such treaties are null and void. This must now concern the former Allied Powers who signed a Treaty of such description with Japan in 1952.

As far back as 1932, Japan ratified an International Labour Organization convention on forced labour. The conscription of unwilling workers and prostitutes during the Sino-Japanese war and its continuing implementation during the Second World War was clearly a violation of this pact. Moreover, referring to the 1965 Japan-Korea Treaty, the principle of *jus cogens* invalidates the intent of the Accord, if it purports to eradicate individual claims by victims of human rights abuses — which Japan obviously had in mind.

These subtleties of international law are highly complex, but the crux of the victims' complaints is this: Japan's post war reparations were mainly in the form of goods and services — such as technical assistance, to help Asian nations to develop their economies. Japan has largely ignored the issue of making amends to the scores of thousands of individuals who were wronged. When it comes to paying for anything, the Japanese can be extremely tight-fisted and, if pushed into a corner will look at alternative options rather than having to give away one yen. This attitude is clearly enunciated and was plainly described when the Chief Cabinet Secretary for the Japanese Government, promised only, that consideration would be given to 'taking other measures in lieu of monetary recompense'. How mean can the Japanese get?

The question may be asked why it has taken so long for the Human Rights Abuses to be addressed? The answer is not simple because it involves a lot of complex factors, but heading this obstruction of justice has been Japan's intransigence and reluctance to face its past. During the post-war Tribunal hearings, Japan kept quiet about the bondage of 250,000 sex-slaves. Predictably, no one talked. By this wilful deceit the War Crimes Tribunals were not told about the brothels or many other atrocities willingly. Thus, only crimes that were known were prosecuted. One hesitates to guess at what punishment this mass atrocity would have incurred, had but the War Crimes Tribunals been aware. It's doubtful if the 1952 Peace Treaty would have been signed in that year — despite America's concern at the spread of Communism and desire to have Japan as an ally. But certain it is, that the matter of compensation to all those unfortunate 'comfort women' would surely have been addressed.

Japan hid this war crime, if not others, and re-entered the world community as a self-governing nation, but with many of its crimes unrequited and in the matter of its cast-off 'comfort women', callously ignored. Early in the 1960s, the Allied Governments knew that the Peace Treaty with Japan was flawed. How could they not know? Representations by organizations and individuals seeking redress for Human Rights Abuses were becoming persistently familiar, and all directed at one country – Japan. But with Japan's astonishing economic recovery, and growing trade-links in place, it was politically and economically undesirable to pursue constituents' concerns for two reasons. The first, was the desire not to offend Japan. The second, that a real Pandora's box would be opened if the wording of the Treaty was found to disadvantage their own constituents' civil and human rights. Therefore, it was best to let sleeping dogs lie. Here then was the corruption of politics.

For years, the signatories to this questionable Treaty – or the governments they represented, have maintained a conspiracy of silence. This has not benefited war victims but, as usual, Japan wins again. Seemingly, only the United Nations will be able to correct a Treaty that is morally and legally wrong in so far as Human Rights Abuses are concerned, because for political and economic reasons, the present governments of signatory nations have not the will or inclination to embarrass themselves or put Japan into a position of accountability.

Another reason why Human Rights Abuses have taken so long to surface has been – in the plight of 'comfort women' – the shame of admitting that they were compelled to be whores. Then, many of those whose rights were violated by the Imperial Army could not turn to their own autocratic governments for assistance. Certain it is that Soekarno of Indonesia would have been totally unsympathetic because of his pro-Japanese leanings. Only in the 1980s, when more democratic governments came to power in former Japanese occupied countries, were victims of Nipponese 'benevolence' able to voice their outrage.

RETRIBUTION — EDUCATION — HUMAN RIGHTS

On 7 October 1942, a Debate was initiated in the British House of Lords by Lord Maugham, who introduced the need for setting up an International Criminal Court for the trial of war crimes after the end of hostilities. He reminded the House that both Great Britain and the United States of America were 'pledged to the principle that retribution for war crimes' was among the major purposes of the war. He also emphasized the need for prompt action, as delay would mean the escape of the guilty and in this regard he pointed out the failure of the Allies to bring war criminals to justice after World War One, and of the futility of the Leipzig Trials after the Armistice.

When replying to the debate, Lord Simon, the Lord Chancellor, responded: 'It is proposed,' he said 'to set up with the least possible delay a United Nations Commission for the Investigation of War Crimes.' Thus it was that the Allied Powers first began to set in train the machinery for bringing to account, irrespective of rank or political office, those whose hands either guided or carried out atrocities in whatever theatre of war. Initially, the greatest concern exercising the minds of Allied politicians was the excesses of the Nazis and their obsessive hate of the Jews. Then too, were the dark rumours of concentration camps and chimneys spewing out grey-brown smoke night and day. That people were being murdered and consumed by fire there was no doubt.

Further, grim accounts of Japanese atrocities began to filter in. Mindless executions, it was becoming apparent, were not the exclusive prerogative of the Nazis. Chillingly, information was supplied of medieval beheadings committed by the Japanese and murder of ships' crews on the high seas. Modern warfare it seemed, had descended not only to barbarity, but criminal licentiousness on a genocidal scale. Clearly, the Axis Powers contemplated victory and had little thought for a day of reckoning.

With the capitulation of the Third Reich, Nuremberg was chosen as the centre for War Crimes Trials in Germany, and though many prominent Nazis were brought to trial, a number so burdened with guilt, took their own lives. Among those who escaped the gallows were Hitler, Goebbels, Bormann, Himmler and Goering – the last took his own life while in custody. There were others who eluded the hangman by vanishing into obscurity – mostly to South America, though Eichmann, a much sought after war criminal, was eventually captured by a Zionist Organization and spirited to Israel where he stood trial, was found guilty, and executed.

When the Empire of Japan surrendered, the Japanese Forces in south-east Asia passed into the hands of the Allies, this included the administration and guards of prisoner of war camps, whose brutality was notorious. Where possible – a number of Japanese officers and guards had fled – photographs were taken and the prints circulated, particularly to Allied ex-prisoners of war who had been repatriated. If they recognized any of the photos they would make affidavits concerning the treatment they had suffered. After such photos were identified, they were then sent with supporting affidavits to the War Crimes Registry at Singapore. Then, where a prima facie case was established, the Legal Section – where possible, brought the accused to trial. In other instances of pursuit of justice, the same criteria were followed.

Many cases of the illegal execution of Allied airmen came to the notice of the Registry as did wholesale murder at sea. In a good many instances successful prosecutions followed, particularly the murder – usually beheadings, of Allied airmen. However, many executions remained unpunished because of the remoteness of location and absence of witnesses. Crimes carried out at sea proved to be very difficult to pursue. Even with surviving witnesses, and they were few, one Japanese submarine looked like another and identification of their crews impossible. They all looked similar and, as expected, none of these maritime war criminals gave themselves up.

Even now, not surprisingly, in the ranks of Japanese War Veterans there must be many unpunished murderers. So widespread were Japanese atrocities and so numerous in number and variety, that it was inevitable a good proportion of them would escape retribution. Many suspects remained untraced owing to their having been 'conveniently transferred' or, in other cases, were fraudulently listed as 'killed in action' or, adopted the identities of those who were genuinely dead. Howsoever, by February 1948, 931 Japanese had been tried by British Military Courts.

In most of these trials it was found that many Japanese witnesses contributed prolix, repetitious and irrelevant testimony for the Defence that through its deliberately misleading nature and phraseology, was rejected because it had little or no probative substance. Then, there was the Japanese penchant for innocuous and flowery language, minimizing dreadful deeds to misdemeanour similes — a patent and artful form of verbal deception. Because of this predilection, many of the prosecution witnesses were, necessarily, cross-examined by a good many Counsel representing the various accused, many of whom covered the same testimony repeatedly. The Japanese language was a trying experience with literal translation of Japanese to English and vice versa. A considerable amount of evidence and testimony had to be paraphrased, but even then, so confusing were the discrepancies of interpretation that Tribunals were obliged to set up Language Arbitration Boards to settle challenges of disputed interpretation.

It was remarked upon after the War Crimes Trials were over, that the Japanese not only had a curious capacity for self-destruction but, were apt to be hysterical, fanatical, cunning and inclined to mentally slip back thousands of years to medieval cultism and an epitomism that glorified suicide and death, a peculiarity supported by the belief that the Emperor was a God — no matter what the Western world said.

Another interesting fact learned from the Japanese after the war was the deep gloom that spread across the land when news of Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto's death was announced. He, above all, was Japan's leading war strategist and was hailed as the brains behind the destruction of the American Pacific Fleet at Pearl Harbour. With his passing it seemed that the lights of a Japanese victory dimmed, so high was the esteem in which he was held. Conversely, however, the Allied commanders in the Pacific heaved a collective sigh of relief. Yamamoto's death, which had been planned, relieved them of their most formidable opponent. Admiral Yamamoto's aircraft was ambushed by a squadron of American Lightning aircraft while flying from Rabaul to Bougainville. It was shot down at a very low altitude, ensuring that none of its crew or passengers would survive the crash.*

With the passage of years and the formalization of relations with Japan, the Western Powers would prefer to forget the vicissitudes and suffering that

* Six escorting Japanese Zeros were also shot down.

attended the Pacific War with a policy of dismissing that tragic conflict in favour of economic self-interest, but it will be a greater tragedy to forget. Mindful of this caution, one only has to ask modern youth and intermediary schoolchildren anything they may have learned about the Second World War. Surprisingly, they have learned their history subjects quite well – that is in matters ancient. Information spills from their lips revealing that the Netherlands explorer Abel Tasman was the first European to discover Australia and New Zealand, and that Van Diemens Land was re-named Tasmania to honour him. Likewise, their knowledge is excellent about the British explorer Captain James Cook who rediscovered these lands a century or more later. Even the fact that Christopher Columbus discovered America, supported with other accurate detail, is supplied but, few if any, know that they very nearly lost their heritage to Japanese aggression in a much later period of history. Seemingly it's not important.

The old adage that 'a nation choosing to ignore its history does so at its own peril', is a very true one indeed. Wars, as history reveals, have a habit of repeating themselves. Peace for all time is not a certainty. Rememberence Days, when old soldiers parade with their medals, and military bands play muted reverent music, has something to do with a declared National Holiday – is in the minds of many of today's youngsters. But they cannot be criticized for such a limited vision. The fault rests with too many pacifist teachers who, for reasons known only to themselves, choose to ignore the very real jeopardy their country was once in, or are too lazy to research a critical and important point in their country's history. Though it should also be mentioned that there are dedicated peace activists who will go to extremes to denounce war – and good on them, providing that such dedication does not impede the education of the country's youth. Casting aside opposition to nuclear ships, the motto 'be prepared' is better than to be unprepared like the Allies were in 1939 and 1941. History may not give us a second chance.

In Japan, where school history books are subject to the approval of the Education Ministry, teachers have no choice. References to Japan's military forays on the Asian mainland and to its attack on Pearl Harbour, or to the fact that it instigated the war in the Pacific, are either watered down or expunged altogether. The heavy hand of censorship prevails. Why? At least most Western countries have a choice in their schools curricula with regard to learning modern history – be it good or bad. However, Japan for its own reasons, chooses to suppress the truth and pretend that its bloody war of expansion never happened. It's bad enough when it attempts to deceive the world over its Human Rights

Abuses, but wilfully to deceive its own children with mis-information and censorship clearly shows a contempt for all moral norms and an arrogance that invites censure.

It is to be hoped that, notwithstanding Japan's continuing intransigence, war victims who suffered Human Rights Abuses at the hands of its Armed Forces, may yet see justice – no matter how belated. The story of their unbelievable suffering has been chronicled in this book not only as irrefutable testimony, but as a salute to their fortitude in adversity. For the countless thousands of dead, their only acknowledgement will be the clarion call of a bugle at Commemorative Dawn Parades. Justice for Human Rights Abuses, denied while they lived, are not forgotten by their inheritors and the countries they left behind. With these memories and firm resolve, the struggle for compensation from Japan for human rights violation will go on. Justice must be seen to be done.

EXIT A TYRANT

At his interrogation in March 1946, General Hideki Tojo, Prime Minister and war leader of Japan, made this testimony.

Since the end of the war I have read about the inhuman acts imposed by the Japanese Navy and Army. These were definitely not the intention of those in authority, namely the General Staff, or the War or Navy Departments or myself. We did not even suspect that such things had happened. The Emperor especially, because of *his benevolence*, would have had a contrary feeling.

Three contradictions of fact can be drawn from the above statement. The government departments were well aware of atrocities in every theatre of war. There was the department that handled looted gold and currency and other valuables. Then there was the War Department that attended to all matters of distaste in the field – just before the surrender, forging false 'killed in action' notices. Also, urgent confidential memos were dispatched urging garrison and prisoner of war camp personnel to flee at the appropriate time, if they were 'held in bad odour' by their captives. Tojo himself, was the source of inspiration in both criminal activity and deception, also, he made a personal visit to Singapore not long after its surrender and stayed at the Raffles Hotel. He could not have helped but notice the carnage that was going on. Then, there was the flowery deception of the Emperor. The word 'benevolence' in Japanese phraseology had, often as not, a sinister connotation in meaning. The Emperor's 'contrary feelings' could be taken with a grain of salt. It was Hirohito who approved Japan's war of expansion on 2 December 1941.

Tojo had much to say while awaiting execution, and because nearly every statement conveyed a political message, it is important to try to understand his mind and aspirations. Therefore, a comment will follow each of his transcribed dictations.

The Americans, who are the real rulers of Japan, should not alienate the feelings of the Japanese or infect them with Communist ideas. The United States should recognize the sincerity of the peoples of East Asia. The fact that Japan had been unable to obtain their co-operation had been the basic cause of its defeat . . .

Tojo's concern over the possible oppression of the Japanese by the Americans came from within his own twisted thinking. He was imagining a similar brutal occupation by Japanese forces in conquered countries, and thought that Americans would do the same. To the contrary, the American and Allied occupation of Japan was benign and generous and included massive food aid. Tojo was ardently anti-Communist, but then, so was America. He worried needlessly on this concern. So far as the people of Asia were concerned, the lamentation that they had not co-operated with the Greater East Asia co-prosperity sphere was a nonsense. The brutality of Japanese occupation was such that conquered countries coined the phrase 'Nippon Taiheiyo - no - gan' that meant literally, 'the Japanese are the cancer of the Pacific'. The Japanese troops were unwelcome and despised.

Blissfully ignoring this low opinion that he most certainly must have been aware of, Tojo went on to say.

The peoples of East Asia *should forget recent events* and co-operate with each other in the years ahead. They should have the right to live in the world just as others did . . . It will be fortunate indeed if the recent war resulted in an understanding that the peoples of East Asia had the right to survival.

Tojo did not practise what he preached. Under Japanese occupation, both east and south-east Asia were subject to turmoil and violence as well as execution and massacre. To suggest that such besieged people 'should forget recent events' and adopt his other views, was plainly a backhanded way of suggesting 'Europeans go home'.

Perhaps, one of Tojo's boldest statements - and the most telling, so far as the United States was concerned, came a few days before he was due to be hanged.

Complete elimination of armaments by all the nations of the world would be wise . . . Though a Third World War - with the United States and the Soviet Union as the protagonists - was inevitable. China, and Korea

would become the nearest battlefield to Japan. It was therefore the responsibility of the United States to devise a policy for Japan's defence.

Tojo was shrewdly correct in naming Korea as a coming battlefield but he was way off the mark concerning China and the USSR. None the less, his reference to the Communist monolith and the need to consider the defence of Japan, did not fall on deaf ears. The mention of Communism had the same impact on the United States Government as the word Capitalism had on Stalin. Presumably Tojo was sowing the seeds for Japan's rearmament and military alliance with America that, hopefully, might result in a future Joint Security Pact. Besides, other advantageous benefits could accrue with such an alliance, even going so far as a more than favourable peace treaty – when that time came. If this was Tojo's astute thinking, then he was not wrong.

Despite the fact that Tojo was a condemned man, every statement that he made was recorded and later published. The following is another example of his mind being more concerned with worldly affairs than his own imminent death. 'The United States should adopt an attitude of magnanimity. The purging of persons in public office and in the teaching profession should cease, as should the arrest of war crimes suspects . . .'

Here, Tojo overstepped the mark. It was a vain attempt to protect old cronies in office and to ensure that the teachers of schoolchildren would still be able to inculcate Japan's glorious destiny and militarist ideals without hindrance. Then too, his call to stop arresting war criminals was as pernicious as it was heartless. Deep within himself Tojo had no conscience, otherwise he would not have declared such feelings which were not generally well-received by the Allies.

With his pending execution providing the occasion, Tojo voiced the hope that a great memorial service would be held for all victims of the war. Everyone should be included – the belligerents and the neutrals – so that the service could constitute a spiritual cornerstone for world peace, he declared, before adding his earnest wish that the battlefield graves of Japan's fallen warriors would be properly tended. If the bereaved families wished, he suggested, the remains of those buried in foreign lands, should be returned to the homeland and their souls enshrined at Yasukuni.

And so General Hideko Tojo's appointment with eternity drew near. In the streets of Tokyo and across the land, millions waited with a fatalistic expectancy. Conversation was muted, sombre. Tojo, their famous or infamous war

leader – depending on individual emotions, was about to be executed. Midnight arrived and passed. So did the time for Tojo's supreme penalty. In hushed whispers people spoke one to another. Already, they were softly talking in the past tense. The overriding sentiment commonly expressed was the phrase, 'Hotto shita ne!' – soft intakes of breath joined with the realization, 'At last, it's over'.

Others murmured, 'Kinodoku, kinodoku.' 'A pity, a pity.' It was a similar expression of helplessness against insurmountable forces when Allied prisoners had been forced to shuffle humiliatingly through the streets of many Japanese cities during the war. Tojo and the 'thought control police' had tried then to eradicate the expression of 'kinodoku', but though suppressed, it emerged once more, ironically, for Tojo.

Early the following week, the American publication, *Time* magazine printed the following. 'Last week, at midnight after the winter solstice, the paths of Japan's top war leaders ended without glory, but with a dignity that seemed enhanced a little by the doubt and confusion among the victors.'

The actual execution of Tojo and co-war criminals was conducted in a bleak and cold setting. A few minutes before the destined hour, the condemned men were led from a courtyard after they had been individually identified by special witnesses. They then slowly mounted thirteen steps unassisted before turning to face the last persons they would see on earth. No final messages were whispered on the gallows; only the murmuring of Buddhist prayers breaking the strained silence.

When the death ropes and hoods had been adjusted, the chief hangman saluted the officer-in-charge of the execution detail. Confirming full preparedness, he swung around with rigid military precision and faced the condemned. It was precisely 0030 hours when he gave the signal for the levers to be pulled.

Among the official witnesses were some members of the Allied Council for Japan: General Chen Shang (China), William J Sebald (US, chairman); Lt-General Kuzma N. Derevyanko (USSR), and Patrick Shaw (British Commonwealth). Their attendance had been requested by General MacArthur.

During the cold dark hours of that historic night, the bodies of the dead were transported by closely guarded US military lorries to a Japanese crematorium in Yokohama. As the vehicles accelerated past the harsh lights bathing the prison gates, soldiers with fixed bayonets stood in a persistent drizzle, barring access to newsmen. At the crematorium, maximum security was imposed to ensure a necessary secrecy in the recovery of the ashes. The

American authorities were determined to prevent the ashes of Tojo and the other executed war criminals from falling into the wrong hands and being subsequently enshrined. Such attempts at finality were destined to be undone by later claims that they did not succeed. Although the ashes were secretly scattered by the authorities, the certainty that a token amount fell into Japanese hands, despite the precautions, is not denied.

The following is a news item selected from the Tokyo office of the United Press.

Scraps of the ashes of Japan's wartime premier Hideko Tojo - secretly hidden from Allied occupation officers - were returned on Friday to his widow. Tojo and six other Japanese war criminals were hanged 23 December 1948, after their conviction by an Allied Military Tribunal. Their bodies were cremated in Yokohama, and the remains secretly disposed of by Allied officials who feared the ashes might be deified and enshrined by the Japanese. None the less, Japanese workers at the crematorium scooped up a few ashes left behind and buried them. They remained concealed until the Allied occupation ended. Later, the recovered remains were handed to the Japanese Government's Repatriation Assistance Bureau which turned them over to their respective families last Friday. 'I am only sorry,' Tojo's widow said when she received the urn, 'that the remains of thousands of Japanese soldiers still have not been returned from the South Pacific and China.'

(Reported: April 23, 1955).

Throughout his long trial and at every opportunity, Tojo persistently extolled the 'benign benevolence' of Emperor Hirohito. Deep within himself he knew that his eventual execution was a foregone conclusion. In his constant efforts to shield the Emperor from any complicity in Japan's blood-letting dating back to 1925, the year Hirohito ascended the throne, Tojo continuously exalted the Imperial Family - Hirohito in particular. So patently blatant were Tojo's eulogies of praise, they were not only embarrassing but politically dangerous to the Emperor himself. Laudatory testimonials from a much despised and notorious war criminal could be viewed in some quarters as being more incriminating than exonerating, and sounded very much like a contrived cover-up intentionally deceiving to conceal the real truth. But whatever, Tojo's adulatory utterances were successful. Hirohito remained shielded from prosecution because none of the war criminals betrayed their 'God Emperor' either.

For Tojo, the medieval belief that, though all else was shattered, his sacred homeland would survive so long as the ancient and 'divine' Imperial line was maintained, was a concept transcending all other earthly considerations. Throughout the ordeal of his trial he was keenly aware of the accusation, never officially made although generally voiced at the time, that Emperor Hirohito was actually more guilty than the world was generally led to believe. Tojo knew that this perception, if prosecuted, would finish the Imperial dynasty if proved – or at least, force the Emperor's abdication. Thus it was and in connivance with the other war criminals, that Hirohito was manifestly shielded.

It was pointed out that if the Emperor had used his powers to conclude the war, which he did, equally he could have prevented it from starting. Tojo's constant defence of the latter conclusion, on the Emperor's behalf, was strenuous and repetitious and ensured that the prime responsibility for the Pacific war rested on himself, and why not? He was already a doomed man. If there was any justification for bringing the Emperor to trial as the chief war criminal, with Tojo as an accomplice and not the instigator, history will never really know. However, one conclusion is certain. If Tojo was the scapegoat, there was never a more guilty one.

Just before he ascended the gallows, Hideko Tojo voiced his last homage to Hirohito. 'Tenno Hei-ka Banzai' – 'May His Glorious Majesty Live for Ten Thousand Ages.' And thus surely, was Tojo an ardent Royalist right to the bitter end.

On 17 August 1960, a joint tomb for the seven top Japanese war criminals executed after the war's end, including General Hideki Tojo, was unveiled in the Tokyo Aichi Prefecture. The relatives of the hanged men, including Mrs Tojo, widow of the wartime Prime Minister, were invited to the unveiling ceremonies. The granite tomb was built on the crest of Sanganesan Hill at Hazu by a group of sympathetic Japanese leaders who empathized with the wartime leader's aspirations. (So much for contrition.) Dr Ichiro Kiyose, President of the House of Councillors, and member of the Japanese legal defence counsel for the war felons in the late 1940s, wrote the inscription placed on the tombstone, which read: **THE TOMB OF THE SEVEN MARTYRS.** (Now a National Shrine.)

Despite the life sentences imposed on many major Japanese war criminals by the Allied War Crimes Tribunals, the Japanese Government, once in power, commuted many of the sentences and by 12 May 1958 released all war criminals in custody. Justice had, once again, been circumvented by the Japanese.

As recently as 7 May 1994 Justice Minister Shigeto Nagano declared publicly that Japan was not an aggressor during World War Two and added that the alleged Nanking massacre of 300,000 Chinese was a 'hoax'. These insensitive falsehoods created an uproar among Asian nations who remembered the Japanese invasion and the dreadful years of occupation. Following these outraged protests, Nagano conceded that his assertions were, 'unfortunately inappropriate'. Once again, the propensity of the Japanese to manipulate and disguise falsehoods with innocuous terminology – a practice at which they are masters, is plainly recognized.

In an attempt to salvage 'face' from the lies uttered by his Justice Minister, and employing similar phraseology, Japanese Prime Minister Tsutomu Hata responded to this chorus of outraged indignation with a brusque press statement announcing, 'I have strictly cautioned the Justice Minister on the inadvisability of referring to past "historical errors" that unfortunately can be "misconstrued". However, the Minister is a man of integrity and a "well-balanced person" nonetheless.' How incredible! One wonders at 71-year old Nagano's outburst. Was it perhaps, that he was old enough to have been an instigator or participant in the Nanking massacre himself? Who knows, but then, why bother investigating Nagano? He wasn't a German.

JUSTICE DENIED

Prior to Japan's attack on Pearl Harbour, the Netherlands East Indies was a thriving prosperous outpost of European endeavour. A fact not generally known to the US State Department prior to 1941, was that the territory held the distinction of being America's largest customer in the Pacific Southern Hemisphere. In many ways it had a standard of living the envy of its neighbours, and an Administration beneficial to its peaceful and contented inhabitants.

Such American products as Colgate toothpaste, Chevrolets and Fords, Palmolive soap and Quaker Oats, as well as United States produced aircraft for the NEI Air Force and McCormack Deering agricultural machinery etc, contributed to progress and reciprocal exports to more than half the world. Thirty years later, as a result of Japan's political and economic interference through its unwelcome occupation, the former East Indies, now Indonesia, was the largest recipient of foreign aid in the Pacific Southern Hemisphere.

Nazemyer Signaal, through Captain J M Ranneft, supplied the design engineering for vastly improved 40-mm A/A guns for Batavia (Djakarta), Java. So superior were these anti-aircraft guns that they were installed from 1941 on all United States Navy warships.

The Netherlands East Indies native population grew by 800% in the same 300 years that the USA indigenous native population fell by approximately 70%.

By coincidence, just before waves of Japanese aircraft attacked Pearl Harbour by surprise on 7 December 1941, the MV *Jagersfontein*, a fast modern Netherlands merchant ship loaded with war supplies, had been cleared to enter Pearl Harbour. It couldn't have arrived at a worse time. Fortunately, the *Jagersfontein* was armed with highly efficient anti-aircraft guns at its bow and stern – the Netherlands had been at war with Germany for nearly two years. These guns started firing the moment Pearl Harbour came under attack. Who knows how many Japanese planes the Netherlands seamen shot down, but one fact is certain.

It made the Netherlands East Indies, the first Allied country to fight alongside the United States.

The Netherlands East Indies maritime fleet contributed hugely to the transport of men and materials in all theatres of the Pacific. With over fifty ships of substantial tonnage and of mostly modern design and speed, they represented the largest unit of merchant shipping under a single Allied flag in the Pacific. Without them, General MacArthur would not have been able to sweep across the Pacific with such dramatic effectiveness. These fine merchant vessels included hospital ships, passenger liners – for transporting troops, freighters, and fuel tankers. Most GIs and war supplies arrived at destinations conveyed by the Netherlands fleet.

Not only was the famous 'Norden' bombsight kept top secret, but also the fact that the inventor, Karel Lukas Norden, was a Netherlands citizen from Semarang, Java. Among his many brilliant inventions were some of the following. The catapult system as used on warships, the automatic pilot as used in aircraft, the gyro-stabilization system for ships and gun-mounts etc, and simplified components for radar detection. Norden Laboratories is now a division of United Technologies and Karel Lukas Norden, was only the second recipient of the Holley Medal for outstanding scientific achievement – Albert Einstein was the first.

The Netherlands East Indies actively fought the Japanese for ninety days – from 8 December 1941, to early March 1942. It declared war against the Japanese within two hours of the Pearl Harbour attack – it took the United States Congress eighteen hours. Netherlands warships helped their British counterparts against an overwhelming Japanese onslaught on Malaya as did its fighter aircraft. Supporting this Allied determination, Netherlands submarines were sinking Japanese troop transports in the South China Sea as they approached Canh Ram Bay and the Malaysian coastline.

Most chronicles in the Western world, faithfully and accurately record the gallant efforts of the Americans, the British, the Free French and the British Dominions and deservedly so. These countries encountered the same savagery from the same murderous nation and endured the similar vicissitudes of surprise attack. However, the largest number of Europeans to be incarcerated by the Japanese and within one Territory were those who lived in the Netherlands East Indies. Their story has largely never been told mainly because of the volume of atrocities committed against servicemen and citizens of other Allied countries by the Japanese.

The Netherlands East Indies war effort must never be forgotten, minimized or presumed ineffectual. Its large merchant marine remained a thorn in Japan's side and contributed to the liberation of a considerable amount of Japanese occupied territory. From 8 December 1941, to 8 March 1942, against hordes of troops outnumbering the Netherlands defenders by twenty to one, the small but courageous Armed Forces held out for ninety days – longer than any other country attacked after Pearl Harbour. A total of ninety Japanese ships were destroyed or sunk by either the NEI Air Force or, the submarine fleet of the Netherlands Navy. The Netherlands defenders lost many surface warships in naval battles and 177 aircraft along with 167 pilots. Their heroic resistance provided the time essential for Canada, the United States, New Zealand and Australia to start arming themselves.

Reverting briefly to 'Japanese benevolence': only recently known to the world, per the United Nations Sub-commission on Human Rights, is an account of a Japanese atrocity perpetrated on a resisting virgin girl who refused to be a whore in a Japanese brothel. The report was supplied by three eye-witnesses. 'An innocent girl vigorously refused to be raped. Screaming with terror she escaped from the brothel and sought shelter in a stable next to a yard holding about a dozen horses. In hot pursuit three Japanese soldiers sought her out, finding her in the stable loft. Callously, the slightly built girl was seized and thrown to the ground below where half-stunned and frightened out of her wits, she was manhandled out into the yard. Ropes were then secured around her upper arms and legs and a fifth rope tied around her neck following which all the rope ends were secured to five different horses. Then, waving a sack, one of the soldiers skittered the horses into bolting. The 15-year old was instantly and gruesomely dismembered. Turning to a group of horrified brothel women, the soldiers warned. "If you do not obey the Imperial Nippon Army, you will die like this".'

It is remarkable that, with such instances of horror unknown to the world, Hollywood – where most perverted and sexually explicit films are made, does not cash in on Japanese atrocities, even if only for bizarre bestiality. This observation stems from the fact that once again, a Nazi war film – completed at the end of 1993, is about to screen at cinemas throughout the world. This motion picture has been acclaimed by Hollywood critics as the best film produced in 1993. As usual, the story-line is all about Nazis killing Jews – in Poland, but primarily centres upon Oscar Schindler, a German businessman who sets up slave labour factories in Poland. The film is titled *Schindler's List*

and incorporates all the tyrannies of the Nazis. Steven Spielberg – of world fame – was the film's director.

It does seem incongruous that after nearly fifty years and with vast sums paid in compensation, that Germany is still targeted for such 'reminding' war films. If this is an on-going vendetta, then surely it has now become very one-sided. For some inexplicable reason, no such 'reminding' war films, equally dreadful, are made about Japan's murderous war – at least in recent times. It would appear that powerful interests are shielding Japan from similar historical truth. It does make one wonder why Germany continues to be castigated while Japan – which hasn't paid one yen in Human Rights compensation, is so protected by Hollywood's Film Moguls. Could it be that Japan now owns half of Hollywood? Whatever the reason, it would appear that the corruption of Big Business and Politics, between them, are 'managing' what will be screened and what will not.

Public opinion, assisted by a dearth of 'war films' gave Germany little choice in the matter of confronting its frightful past. Nothing was censored, everything was revealed. But Japan strangely, has been exempted. Why? Even Vietnam and its 'internal war' has been the subject of numerous Hollywood productions. Indeed, it would be safe to assume that if the Japanese had been subjected to the same number of 'war films' as has been directed at the Nazis, almost certainly public opinion would have shamed Japan into acknowledging its guilt and paying compensation.

Suppression of the truth and a reluctance to portray Japan's murderous past must have an underlying reason. There is a wealth of material available, sufficient to make at least 100 films that would be commercially successful. This has not happened for the simple reason that Japan must not be embarrassed. No wonder that those who suffered dreadfully under the Japanese are having such a difficult time in obtaining compensation for Human Rights Abuses. Japan feels that it has been exonerated by the world, and with no bad 'press' or film publicity, why worry?

Perhaps the most recent notable film dealing with Japan's war of conquest might well be Steven Spielberg's *Empire of the Sun*. But sadly, this film, unlike Spielberg's Third Reich film *Schindler's List*, lacks historical credibility. In the German film, Spielberg allows the story and background to flow with authenticity and truthfulness. However, his zeal for *Empire of the Sun* was selective and discriminatory and avoided the more compelling horrors that Shanghai endured following Japanese occupation.

The large number of civilian internees were treated abominably and starvation was the order of the day. Guards, armed with rifles and fixed bayonets harassed, punished, clubbed and beat senseless prisoners who forgot to bow or who infringed some minor camp rule. Officers and NCOs were equally vicious and strutted about the camp wearing their ominous samurai swords – they were not for decoration. Sixteen hundred Chinese civilians were beheaded in Shanghai along with fourteen Europeans. Towards the end of their captivity, the Europeans were like walking skeletons dressed in rags. Illness was rife, the death toll alarming and medical supplies that could have saved lives were deliberately destroyed by the Japanese. Not content with these inhuman punishments, the Japanese encouraged malnutrition of the survivors by simply starving them. Then to make imprisonment as harsh as possible under their ‘benevolence’, the prisoners were compelled to work ten hours a day in back-breaking forced labour, year in, year out.

The film *Empire of the Sun* paints a somewhat different more cosy picture of Shanghai under Japanese occupation. Officers and NCOs are shown carrying bamboo canes instead of their usual grisly swords. Hardly a guard carries a rifle and certainly not with a fixed bayonet. The prisoners all look well fed and clothed and slave labour scenes are avoided. Then for melodramatic effect, an English boy is shown at the salute – voluntarily singing a Japanese song for some Japanese pilots. What rot!

One only has to compare the British film *Bridge over the River Kwai* with the American film *Empire of the Sun* to note the huge disparity, by omission, of real-life war-time hardship and brutality. The British film makes no attempt to cover up Japanese cruelty nor did it tamper with history. Japanese officers wore samurai swords and the guards carried rifles with fixed bayonets – not less harmful-looking bamboo canes. Equally, the prisoners were shown as living in appalling conditions as well as being clothed in tattered rags. Indeed, if one were obliged to view both films in sequence, it would be difficult to reconcile the fact that they both portrayed the same war and enemy.

Not only did *Empire of the Sun* downplay Japanese atrocities, it excluded three years of captivity for the unfortunate prisoners, 1942, 1943 and 1944. These were truly the horrific years of internment, but for reasons known only to Spielberg, those three torturous years of imprisonment and slave labour – which would have told a different story, were deliberately avoided. Why? Then again, the closing scenes of the film *Empire of the Sun* portrayed all the prisoners’ belongings, mostly household goods, displayed across acres of land like some

huge auction lot – presumably available for re-possession by their original owners. Never would the Japanese have been so considerate. What they stole would have been kept, and what they couldn't take with them would have been destroyed. If the intention of the portrayal was to inveigle the thought that perhaps the Japanese retreated honourably, then it can only invite criticism. The Japanese were a vengeful lot and did no such thing. Everything they thieved disappeared for ever.

Such contradictions, epitomized by grossly inaccurate melodrama, may delight the Japanese, but would be offensive to the feelings of those who lost everything and would be insensitive to the real truth that the Japanese looted on a grand scale and nothing was ever recovered; nor for that matter were the Japanese plunderers ever punished.

One does not need to be a psychologist to analyze the determinants governing specific viewpoints. A most powerful nation can influence its official policy across a wide spectrum of commercial endeavour, particularly within its political sphere. Japan is, without doubt, at the receiving end of such influence which for many years has been beneficial and indulgent. Fortunately too, its powerful neighbour, now an ally, was able to absorb its Second World War losses and to even extend considerable aid to its former enemy. Other Allied countries have been obliged to follow suit – like it or lump it. Consequently, Japan has benefited hugely in every aspect of political, economic and human endeavour even to the point where its war history is tinkered with by film-makers – to make it more favourable.

Is it any wonder that victims of Human Rights Abuses suffered under 'Japanese benevolence', have such an uphill battle against a country that is now deemed respectable – until the next time. International diplomacy pays scant regard to the concerns of ordinary people at the best of times, and such matters as demands for justice involving tens of thousands of war victims remain ignored in favour of export-import deals involving hundreds of millions of yen or dollars. Such is the venality of those in high places.

On a slightly different subject is the news that a survey team will visit the far-eastern Russian island of Sakhalin in the near future to plan the repatriation of Koreans forced into labour camps there by the Japanese during the Second World War. It seems inconceivable that a country responsible for displacing so many people from another country and enjoying the fruits of ill-deserved prosperity accumulated through near fifty years of peace, has done nothing to assist the repatriation of so many thousands of Koreans its Armed Forces

enslaved and then abandoned when Japan surrendered. But abandoned them Japan has since the end of the Second World War.

An estimated 150,000 Koreans were transported to the island for forced labour during the war when Korea was under Japanese imposed colonial rule. The survey team, comprising officials from South Korea, Japan and the International Red Cross, will try to determine how many Koreans on the island want to return to their homeland, and how to help those who want to stay. About 42,000 from the first generation and their descendants live on the island, of which 13,000 wanted to return to Korea. Of the original 150,000 Korean slave labourers, 100,000 perished.

The Government of South Korea believes Japan is legally responsible for the repatriation, resettlement, and living costs of the returning Koreans, as well as offering profound apologies and being obliged to pay suitable compensation. This joint survey is the first concrete step to resolve an issue more than fifty years overdue. However, because the Soviet Union occupied Sakhalin island at war's end, the Japanese Government is quick to point out that it has no mandate over Sakhalin, its former territory, and believes that Russia should help in the cost of the repatriation plan.

This miserly attitude of the Japanese Government is not unexpected. It was the Japanese not the Russians, who turned Sakhalin island into one huge Korean slave-labour camp. The Russians will, without doubt, remind the Japanese of this fact – even if it isn't in Japanese school history books. Then too, unlike most other Western Powers, the leaders of Russia will retain their pragmatism and knowledge of Japanese intransigence to thwart any deviousness or attempts at passing the buck. Japan will most certainly try to avoid massive pay-outs, but against Russian purposefulness, it may well meet its match.

Truth suppressed is justice suppressed. There can be no equivocation here. But, despite the unctuous platitudes of those who control the destiny of the world at its highest levels (politics and finance) corruption, injustice and prevarication prevails. We live in an imperfect world where the corruptive power of great tides of wealth call the shots. Spawning a huge diversity of threats to world order would have to be war, mass prostitution, drugs and organized crime. Add to this, past unpunished war crimes – injustice, and the average citizen can be forgiven for wondering what the word 'retribution' really means.

The Japanese industrial giant Mitsubishi prospered mightily during Japan's war of aggression. This huge company was supplied with all the unwilling slave labour it required during the war years by the Imperial Japanese Army. Most

of its enslaved workers were forcibly transported from Korea. They had no choice and were treated abominably as 'prisoner-slaves' in Japan. Mitsubishi is now one of the world's largest and most respected industrial giants. But how many ordinary people know that this success was obtained through the employment of slave labour many of whom died of ill-treatment?

Finally, a concluding reference to prisoner of war camps would not go amiss. Typically, prisoners in Japanese camps were deliberately starved. Their bodies racked with fatigue and forced to work long hours under a burning sun while enduring hunger and pain, many died of exhaustion and malnutrition. Others, weakened by starvation, disease and fever, and often by vicious blows from rifle butts, perished in quite large numbers. Any prisoner so desperate as to try to filch a handful of rice from the supply tent was instantly beheaded if caught, but so desperate was their starvation that terrible risks were taken. Strangely, the wastage of rice to plundering rats was ignored. But the refusal to open cases of Red Cross medical supplies that could have saved so many lives, was a sadistic perversion uniquely Japanese and sums up the indictments against the Imperial Japanese Army and the wartime Government of Japan.

On a happier comparison, let us revisit the prisoner of war camp at Featherston, New Zealand. Japanese prisoners worked a maximum of thirty-three hours a week; were supplied with all-weather protective clothing including stout work-boots, sun-glasses, eye-masks, and a third uniform if requested. Medical treatment was of an extremely high standard and included bone and skin grafts - consequent to war wounds, orthopaedic treatment, Swedish massage, and full dental services in their own camp hospital. Food was of such abundance and quality that the Japanese prisoners were being issued with more than they could eat. Living quarters had reached such a standard of comfort that each hut unit was equipped with a radio and easy chairs as was the officers' mess. Also supplied were playing cards, mah-jong sets, ping-pong tables, a wrestling ring, sports grounds and equipment as well as quiz and cinema shows. To complement this civilized treatment - much to the amazement of prisoners, cordials, ice-cream and aerated soft-drinks were provided on special occasions.

Japan is urged to follow Germany's example and to be honest with its children, and in the name of humanity, civilization and justice, to stop being evasive and to face squarely up to its dreadful past - no matter how unpalatable. Compensation too, must be honoured and in the same manner and spirit dispensed, like the Federal Republic of Germany.

In conjunction with the International covenant on Human Rights, the

post-war Allied Governments should no longer continue to copy Japanese evasiveness. With moral and legal obligations repudiated for nearly five decades, the former Allied Governments have obstructed and denied justice to their own citizens, bringing into question the contravention of International Law and how it must be addressed.

No government has the legal right to conclude agreements with another – in this example a former belligerent, whereby Human Rights Abuses are exonerated and future claims of hundreds of thousands of war victims made impossible. Such agreements can only be viewed as reprehensible, illegal and a conspiracy to pervert the course of justice – for no other reason than political and financial expediency.

When an aggressor nation responsible for so much carnage and destruction, receives better treatment than its millions of victims, it has to be described as not only outrageous, but a travesty of justice that makes a mockery of the word 'retribution'. This corruptive power of politics by stealth, supported by a cold war mentality and high finance, was orchestrated by collaborators who cared nothing for the suffering of those they were supposed to represent. Hence it was easy for these yesterdays-men to grant complete absolution to the Japanese in what many would consider, a treaty of convenience that unaccountably disregarded Human Rights Abuses and sexual slavery.

It is quite untenable for governments to raise their hands in horror and piously declare ignorance of Japanese wartime army brothels. There are abused women living today who, in their twilight years, are reminding the conscience of the world in their struggle for justice and compensation from Japan.

According to a 'press' item dated 18 January 1994, three elderly Korean women who declared they were forced into sexual slavery by the Japanese Army during the Second World War attempted suicide but were stopped by the police. The three, dressed in white funeral clothes, were among a large group of women demonstrating in front of the Japanese Embassy in central Seoul. They were shouting slogans and insults and demanded not only an apology, but compensation for wartime Human Rights Abuses. Japan has made a belated apology but continues to refuse to pay compensation.

This is just one of hundreds of instances where the Japanese doggedly refuse to face up to their past and reinforces the belief that the Peace Treaty with Japan was a hasty and expedient conclusion of political and economic interests, brought about by the Allies' paranoid fear of Communism. Politics, not Human Rights Abuses, was the pressing priority in 1952. Thus, Japan was saved the

embarrassment of having to endure an exposé of sexual bondage and the disgrace of the world learning about its Imperial Army brothels.

Post-war Allied intelligence must have been aware of the establishment and vast network of Japanese Army brothels and the concupiscence of its raping soldiery. Six years had elapsed since the end of the war – more than sufficient time to learn about the scores of thousands of captive females forced into sexual slavery, but strangely, this dreadful atrocity did not attract the publicity or punishment it deserved.

Then, there was the matter of wholesale thieving carried out on an organized scale in conquered countries by the rapacious occupying garrisons. Countless thousands of people were not only imprisoned or slaughtered, but their removable assets – particularly gold, silverware, precious stones and currency, were seized and shipped to Japan, forever lost to their rightful owners. Seemingly, rape and looting were crimes of lesser moment to the Allied intelligence services or more probably, were deliberately embargoed by the Allied Powers as potentially embarrassing obstacles to America's strong desire to recruit Japan as a post-war ally against Communism.

As recently as 21 January 1994, the World News Service suggested that ex-President Marcos of the Philippines, had salted away \$22.3 billion in gold – some 1,200 tonnes, which was alleged to be stored in an airport high security warehouse in Switzerland. Mentioned in this despatch was the accusation that Marcos acquired this enormous wealth by theft, misappropriation and foreign aid, and from sources directly linked to some of the gold seizures recaptured from the Japanese Army during their retreat from the Philippines.

It is pertinent to ask, if one man could amass such ill-gotten gains in peace-time, what untold wealth could an aggressor army seize in war and, unbelievably, be allowed to keep? Wonder not, therefore, at Japan's rapid prosperity since World War Two.

The vagaries of politics contribute to more than half the world's troubles, with greed, intolerance and discrimination heading the list. Ideologies, no matter the philosophy or persuasion, have a common denominator that includes visionary or imaginary beliefs that reflect the will – right or wrong, of nations as a whole. The United States as champion of the free world, remained determined to triumph over International Communism. If this objective was to be realized, then accommodation of principles had to be the play-thing of politics. No better example of this determination can be instanced than the Vietnam War.

It is worthwhile to recall America's response to the Vietnam conflict. There, Communism was the catalyst as North Vietnam tried to take over the South. Impervious to world opinion, the United States threw its military might behind South Vietnam – in a localized war it would later bitterly regret. 'We are fighting for democracy' was the catch-cry, but in a foreign country by dubious invitation became a contentious issue that was ultimately to divide America, Australia and New Zealand – America's World War Two Allies, joined in this drawn out conflict that was regarded by most countries as unwinnable and questionably interventionist – despite the pretext that the freedom of south-east Asia was at stake.

More bombs were dropped on North Vietnam than throughout the Second World War, this included the use of defoliants and napalm as well as incendiaries and high explosive. The point to note is simply this. Where America perceived the threat of Communism – even on distant shores, it pursued a foreign policy of containment rather than confrontation, but as in South Korea, aggression had to be resisted. Fortunately, the United Nations became involved in Korea, but so far as Vietnam was concerned, it remained aloof. However, despite enormous cost and bitter acrimony – 51,000 United States troops were killed and 2,238 missing in action – America fought a war where, seemingly, inexhaustible manpower reserves, enabled the Vietcong successfully to counter helicopter gunships and napalm attacks with dogged resistance. Like the Japanese in the Second World War, one million Vietcong dead was sustainable, proving that manpower in close quarters combat, was as effective as the surfeit of modern technology that America employed against North Vietnam.

Eventually, American, Australian and New Zealand public opinion compelled these three warring countries to cease their unpopular involvement in a foreign country's internal strife – North Vietnam was winning the war in any event. But so abstruse was America's chagrin at the ignominious end of its futile involvement and the collapse of the corrupt South Vietnamese Government, it imposed a trade embargo on the reunited country that lasted from 1975 until 3 February 1994, a period of nineteen years that many countries observed, but not Japan.

During this long period of economic boycott, and though professing to be an ally of the United States, Japan surreptitiously expanded its economic influence into Vietnam, reaping the benefits of an isolated market which was in principle, a devious foray of economic expansion into a country much ostracized by America – its Security Pact Ally. But then, Japan's intransigence and duplicity should have come as no surprise.

With this background of political intrigue and surreptitious malfeasance, the accolade of trust becomes meaningless. With the committal, dedication and single-mindedness of the United States to overcome Communism, one's thoughts excusably revert to its earlier Peace Treaty with Japan. Knowing the lengths America would pursue to stop the spread of Communism – albeit with the support of Japan and its Imperial Institution, one wonders what political accommodation or compromise was reached in return for Japan's logistical and military assistance – should this need arise?

Perhaps, this could explain the exoneration of war reparations from Japan and compensation claims for its Human Rights Abuses, in the absence of any other reason or need. To the ordinary person, power politics remain meaningless and incomprehensible. If unexplained, as was often the case in those less informed times, the intricacies of political subterfuge went largely unchallenged, if not unnoticed.

If justice became a victim of politics and principles a convenience of circumstance, then surely the following resumé would be the most controversial of all. As if to confound reason, the World Health Organization has begun making representations to the World Court at the Hague seeking an opinion on whether nuclear weapons were legal or illegal under international law. In this submission countries worldwide are being invited to express their points of view to the World Court.

Should the Court rule that using nuclear weapons has always been against international law, then this could make the Allies who agreed to the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki look bad, and expose their vulnerability to colossal claims for compensation by Japanese survivors. Alternatively, should the court rule that using nuclear weapons is legal, then Pakistan, Iraq, North Korea and Iran will feel justified in continuing their development of nuclear weapons, so too will other countries be tempted to start experimenting with nuclear fission while existing nuclear powers will see no moral reason for destroying their stockpiles.

If, however, the World Court rules against nuclear weapons, it will take little imagination to visualize the immediate rush of compensation claims by the Japanese citizenry of both Nagasaki and Hiroshima. Once again – but only by fate, the Japanese would succeed and technically would be compensated for waging an aggressive war. But, if this transpired, before such hypothetical claims were acknowledged, Japan should first compensate Allied war victims who have been waiting almost half a century for their claims to be addressed.

With regard to Japanese war crimes, mention must be made of 'Unit 731' and its diabolical plans to launch chemical and bacteriological warfare against Allied forces. Veterans of 'Unit 731' remain to this day supremely proud of the fact that it was the only army unit established by Imperial decree. Emperor Hirohito was personally aware of it, and interested in, the possibility of a Japanese victory through the use of germ warfare.

The experiments conducted by 'Unit 731' were undoubtedly the most horrifying revelation discovered by American war crimes investigators, but for reasons known only to General Douglas MacArthur, the discovery was suppressed and the general public kept in the dark. Subsequently and consequent to this extraordinary cover-up, the Tokyo Trials became an orchestrated farce in so far as Hirohito's guilt was concerned. The Imperial Seal authorizing the establishment of 'Unit 731' implied automatically that the Emperor knew full well what he was approving and which involved an estimated first year expenditure of six million yen, a financial consideration also known to him.

So desperate was MacArthur to absolve Hirohito from the taint of connivance in war crimes – the Imperial Seal on the formation of 'Unit 731' would have exposed the Emperor's guilt – that a special order was issued forbidding discussion or prosecution on any matters relevant to atrocities committed by the Japanese scientists involved, their protection being no less than the Allied Supreme Commander in connivance with Hirohito.

As history is now revealing, some major war crimes were never prosecuted – deliberately. General Shiro Ishii who headed 'Unit 731' was a gifted scientist who had no qualms when it came to experimenting with germ warfare on human beings. To further spread his net of evil intent, 'Unit 731' was established with branches in Nanking, Singapore and Rangoon, though its best supplied murdering facility was at Ping Fan, sixty kilometres south of Harbin in Northern Manchuria.

Victims for scientific tests were supplied by an ever-willing Kempetai who provided many thousands – all of whom perished as human guinea pigs. Among the arsenal of chemical and bacteriological resources employed by 'Unit 731' were quantities of bacteria involving tetanus, salmonella, typhus, anthrax and smallpox. For added interest, prussic acid injections and freezing chambers – minus fifty degrees centigrade, along with varieties of poison gas, were also experimented with. Some victims were infected with amoeboid dysentery, blackwater fever, tetanus, various strains of meningococci and septicaemia and highly contagious cholera.

The freezing chambers were so designed as to permit the viewing of naked prisoners while monitoring their heartbeats until they perished from the intense cold. Most of the prisoners who succumbed to these inhuman barbarities – there were no survivors, were either Koreans or Chinese though a number of Allied prisoners of war including Australian, British, American and Netherlands servicemen were also sacrificed to determine their particular endurance as opposed to the bodily resistance factors of Asian victims. Those who were subjected to lethal injection or poisonous gas died quickest. But whether death was rapid or slow there was only one end, after which the bodies were cremated.

During the waging of Japan's 'punishment war' against the Chinese, plague-carrying rats were released close to a large concentration of Chinese troops, but this experiment proved disastrous. Not only did thousands of Chinese die, but the intended plague contamination got out of hand and infected Japanese troops as they advanced, killing close to 2,000 of them.

Every conceivable spore or culture that could spread disease was nurtured and cultivated under the auspices of 'Unit 731'. Cholera was by far the easiest disease to spread and without medical treatment it was a certain killer. Leprosy spores were also available but because of their much slower debilitating effect were not used.

It was known that the Emperor of Japan read every State document or army proposal carefully before affixing the Imperial Seal – which meant agreement. It was for this reason, therefore, that General MacArthur went to great lengths to protect Hirohito. 'Unit 731' was the only army command that enjoyed the distinction of the Emperor's personal approval. It would have been disastrous for the Imperial Institution were the world to learn that Hirohito was indeed a war criminal. Thus it was that the existence of 'Unit 731' was suppressed though in the fullness of time, when the truth finally became known, it irrevocably sullied the memory of MacArthur's integrity as well as casting a dark stain on American history.

Clearly, MacArthur had too much power. Both the United States Congress and the Senate along with the Soviet Union, New Zealand, China, Australia, Holland and the Philippines, wanted Hirohito tried as a war criminal. Against this formidable demand, three men stood in the way. They were President Harry S. Truman, General MacArthur and the former American Ambassador to Japan, Joseph C. Grew. The former diplomat was seemingly mesmerized by Japan's Imperial Dynasty and spoke out strongly and often against prosecuting the Emperor as a war criminal. 'It would,' he repeatedly warned, 'invite civil

unrest and anarchy, the perfect situation for Communist activists to exploit in their drive for power.'

With such advice and tempered by what could well be prophetic warnings, both MacArthur and Truman heeded the diplomat's advice. Ultimately, France and Great Britain then the rest of the Allied Powers – after being briefed by Truman's ambassadors, agreed to desist in their demands for Hirohito's prosecution. The threat of a possible Communist insurgency within Japan no doubt compelling reason above revenge. Besides, the Emperor was projected as a stabilizing influence and could be counted upon to rally the support of his nation beneficial to the Allies. Hence prosecution, no matter what Hirohito was responsible for, was out of the question, so too was Communism as far as Japan was concerned – a bonus for capitalist oriented America.

It was this paranoid fear of Communism that saved Hirohito from the gallows, not because he was an innocent man – far from it. As Head of State and enjoying Divine Rule, the Emperor was well informed on everything relating to Japan's war of conquest. Within the palace he would stand gloating in his war-room while aides moved Rising Sun flags across Asia and the Pacific in the heady weeks following Pearl Harbour. He was not the pathetic misunderstood Mikado that he made himself out to be when later, Japan surrendered. But best of all, he knew that not one of his entranced subjects would betray him. After all, was he not a God Emperor?

Because the Allies appeared to be on a collision course with the Soviet Union and with half of Europe sovietized, Hirohito astutely realized that his role as Emperor would be a continuing one despite his complicity in war crimes. He was not wrong. During the six years of the predominantly American occupation, he was treated with a deference and generosity that must have intrigued his sensibilities. This astonishing about-face by America, who bayed for his punishment during the Pacific conflict, marked a period of co-operation that was unexpectedly cordial. Perhaps convinced that indeed he must really be a God, Hirohito collaborated wholeheartedly with one inscrutable purpose in mind. To make Japan strong again and the throne secure.

Both the post-war Japanese Administration and the American occupation authorities joined in a concerted effort to down-play Hirohito's pre-war role. In polite terms, such political aggrandizement was a propaganda exercise involving being at least careless with the truth if not bordering on downright falsehoods. But it worked and was believed by the world until Hirohito's unlamented death in 1988. Realizing this deception for what it was, it should

be said that it was immoral to sustain such a palpably false portrayal of history to the newer generations of Japanese. Not only are their school history books censored, but to be inveigled into believing falsehoods does no credit to Japan or for that matter America which collaborated in these deceptions.

Fortunately, the rest of the world is learning the real truth about Japan and its wartime leaders along with the previously unknown misdeeds of more than one Imperial Prince. Corruption of politics was not exclusively the domain of the former Axis Powers. America through its close association with Japan, became infected with the uniquely Japanese disease recognized as prevarication. This was the price paid for consorting with an artful former foe and following a lengthy period of occupation, a mind-set had been established where the wink of an eye or elaborate bow accommodated each other's mutual interests.

Apart from gaining America's consent to glorify Hirohito and fool the world, Japan's next step was to secure a peace treaty that would ignore their victims while at the same time securing massive economic aid for themselves. In this objective the Japanese were eminently successful. Consequently, the Allies, but America in particular, must shoulder considerable blame for the disenfranchisement of human rights claims against Japan by their own nationals in the Treaty that eventually followed.

In those distant but decidedly political days, America called the shots and was determined to stay ahead of the Soviet Union militarily, economically and industrially. If this meant trading with the Devil, then albeit it would and did. Never mind the plight of the thousands of Allied war victims. Japan for political reasons, had to come first. What an inconsiderate decision. An aggressor nation receiving good treatment and every consideration, while those who fought, suffered and endured under Allied flags, were cast aside as if of no account or, of penultimate worthiness.

Emperor Hirohito shrewdly assessed America's paranoia of Communism and its misguided desire not to prosecute him as a war criminal but to keep him on his throne. This American attitude directed by MacArthur and supported by Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, was strengthened by several meetings between the veteran American politician and Hirohito where, among matters discussed, was Japanese re-armament and membership of the Western Alliance - believed important to Western security as a whole.

During 1950-51, the United States Central Intelligence Agency was warning of the Soviet Union's expected entry into the Korean war. If this occurred,

Japan would have to re-arm rapidly. It had the manpower and military reputation. All it needed was Allied – albeit, American consent.

Subsequently, in 1952 the San Francisco Peace Treaty was signed, offering unbelievable leniency to Japan. War reparations were absolved and with deliberate though far-seeing perspicaciousness, Article 14 of the Treaty, pointedly exonerated Japan from any or all compensation claims its former war victims might bring against it.

In return and undoubtedly joyful at its good fortune, Japan as an equal partner, signed the Security Treaty with the United States later the same day. This immediately allowed the re-armament of Japanese Self Defence Forces under the sovereignty of the Emperor of Japan and commanded by Japanese Admirals and Generals. With self-government restored, how the nation must have rejoiced.

A point that should be noted, was the reluctance of the newly approved Prime Minister Yoshida for his government to shoulder the financial burden of Japan's restored Armed Forces. Hirohito was none the less enthusiastic, mainly because of a most favourable Peace Treaty and America's promise of logistical and material support for Japan's emergent Self Defence Forces. This involved a number of warships and aircraft as well as a considerable amount of field weaponry.

With Japan once more master of its own destiny, and with absolution inherent in the freshly signed Peace Treaty, it is time to reflect sombrely, not on what Japan gained, but on what the Allies signed away. At the stroke of a pen, Article 14 of the Treaty granted Japan immunity for its war of aggression and all attendant excesses. Its millions of Human Rights Abuses and acts of inhumanity, along with murder, rape and looting, were legitimized if not condoned. The many atrocities including massacres, torture and forced labour, etc were forgiven by those who represented the voiceless victims of Japanese barbarity. Those yesterday politicians had no right to grant these exonerations, but grant them they did. Consequently, Japan still hides behind a Treaty that must go down as the strangest one in history.

This disgraceful Treaty ultimately ensured Japan's full political co-operation thereafter and was also of particular satisfaction to America and the Western Alliance when the Security Treaty was also signed – but oh at what a reprehensible cost of morality. No wonder Hirohito was enthusiastic. That is why this book is titled *The Allied Japanese Conspiracy*.

Some apologists, seeking to minimize the Allies's dispassionate acceptance

and signing of the Peace Treaty, point to the Japanese penchant for secrecy whereby thousands of war crimes were concealed from the Allies. By implication we are asked to believe that if the Signatories to the Peace Treaty had been aware of this concealment and Japanese duplicity, it would never have been signed. What nonsense. The uniquely cruel litany of Japanese atrocities already known, would have made even the Devil smile in evil admiration. It was political expediency, not morality that ruled the day, hastened by the tensions of the European Cold War and the emergence of a monolithic Communist China as well as a troublesome Communist North Korea.

Certainly, a serious impediment that the Allies encountered when their forces first occupied Japan, was the lack of substantive information that should have been more readily available from appropriate Government Ministries. Even while Hirohito was preparing to make a recording of his surrender speech to the nation, all over Tokyo and across the land, fires began: these were not out-of-control conflagrations caused by incendiary bombs, but deliberately lit bonfires, in military and Ministry headquarters, inside the palace courtyards and those of the Kempetai headquarters. Every official document or confidential dossier file, was fed to the hungry flames. The intention being that there would be no incriminating evidence for Allied Occupation Forces to find.

With so much evidence relating to war atrocities consumed by fire, it would be undeniably frustrating for the Allies in their search for cold hard facts and evidence of crimes suspected. This would explain why a number of war crimes have remained concealed fifty years before, finally, being brought out into the open and why thousands more will forever remain Japan's dark secrets. With the kindest interpretation possible, it is probable that though the Allies were well aware of heinous atrocities in considerable number, they were unaware of the sheer enormity of war crimes committed that totalled so many thousands more.

What emerges from the facts now known up to the year 1994 is simply this. After the War Crimes Tribunals had completed their tasks in bringing what war criminals they could find to justice, their dossiers were closed in the honest belief that justice had been served. But sadly, justice had been circumvented by recalcitrant Japanese still smarting from the shock of defeat. Only they knew of the 27,000 murdered 'comfort women' who perished as whores against their will and who, broken in body and spirit, rebelled at being forced into sexual slavery but paid for their disobedience with their lives.

It remains a question whether the Allies were aware of the establishment of

so many army brothels and the sex-slavery imposed. It is difficult to argue that they didn't on the assumption that at least some of the women must have complained, besides which, the local populace relieved at Japan's defeat, would surely have been only too willing to tell the authorities of their locations and the conscription of local women and girls to work in these brothels as whores. Whatever, and strange as it may seem, the Allies did not launch a full investigation – to the relief of the Japanese. Thus a dreadful crime, manifold in numbers and excesses, was exculpated without prosecution.

This war crime was one of the best kept secrets to survive the Allied Occupation, but was there a complicity not to prosecute? This question is asked in all seriousness because of previous immunity granted by MacArthur for equally reprehensible war crimes. The scales of justice, or so it seemed, were weighed heavily in Japan's favour. In so far as the Japanese were concerned, this would explain the ambiguous inclusion of Article 14 in the Peace Treaty. The presence of the clause granting full exoneration for Human Rights Abuses suggests a motivation guided by prior knowledge or, was included at the behest of the Japanese – their guilt weighing heavily with them, compounded no doubt with disagreeable thoughts of crippling claims for compensation for Human Rights Abuses the moment self-government was restored.

Whichever way International Jurists or the United Nations examine this contentious Peace Treaty, it is likely that Article 14 may be found illegal, but with this determination arises the distinct possibility that the Signatory Powers, along with Japan, may be found culpably liable at law – presumably, the former Allied Powers 'for damages' and Japan 'for Human Rights Abuses'. Strengthening this assumption is the certainty that no government can repudiate the human rights of its citizens with another. This is a premise upheld by the United Nations itself.

If society is expected to observe and abide by the rule of law, then so should governments. Justice must replace prevarication. Need should replace greed. Without doubt, Japan has thus far avoided paying billions in compensation to its human problem that will never go away, but perversely, it refuses to confront its bloody past. Searching for reasons that might explain Japan's continuing intransigence, it is possible that because the Emperor was redeemed and misguidedly found blameless for leading his country into war, that the Japanese no longer feel a sense of shame or guilt because, after all, every atrocity carried out was committed in the Emperor's name.

Hirohito had good reason to feel apprehensive about what was perpetrated

in his name as well as the shame of Lord Mountbatten's opinion of him. He was aware that the last Viceroy of India held strong and uncompromising views about Japan and Hirohito in particular. Mountbatten was among those who called for the Emperor to sign the surrender on board the American battleship *Missouri*, in person and, as US Army General Henry H. Arnold remarked in conversation, he thought the entire Japanese Imperial Family were 'morons, degenerate and inbred' and believed 'the Royal Family and Imperial Institution should be abolished'. Hirohito knew of this enmity from high places and as a consequence was doubly dependant on MacArthur's protection.

But not everything was glum or depressing for the Emperor of Japan. He continued to enjoy the privileges of his sacred title and was being received by General MacArthur with a quasi-deference and warmth he had not imagined possible. With assurances that his place on the throne was secure, and untroubled by affairs of State – Japan was under American Administration, he had time to consider his certain future as Emperor and to evaluate his many investments and assets both in Japan and abroad.

Without question, Hirohito was the wealthiest man in the country. Included in his assets was 3 million yen in silver, 309 million in gold bullion, 2 million in precious gems, 110 million yen in Tokyo bank deposits and an even larger fortune in local and overseas investments. Of particular interest was his 22% of the Yokohama Specie Bank – an investment that exceeded his other assets combined. This bank had specialized in overseas enterprises in Japanese occupied territory during the war??? This latter investment, acquiring as it did such vast and sudden wealth, has never been explained???

A number of former Allied officials have agreed that Imperial Household assets transferred from Japan and occupied countries – when the war began to go badly, exceeded one hundred million US dollars (1945 value). Twenty million was deposited in Swiss banks, thirty-five million in South America, but with forty-five million untraced. No authority was ever issued to recover these missing millions and by 1952 the Allied Occupation had come to an end. The source of the Emperor's overseas wartime-assisted prosperity which was phenomenal, was never investigated. A pity in retrospect, because the millions that the Japanese conquerors plundered had to end up somewhere.

Hirohito owned a large number of Mitsubishi shares – the Japanese conglomerate that employed Korean forced labour during the war. The board of directors of Mitsubishi were never prosecuted for Human Rights violations despite the fact that many of these Koreans were transported unwillingly from

their homeland as a consequence of being rounded up by the Japanese Army. It is certain that the Allied Occupation Authorities knew of Mitsubishi's dreadful record but, incomprehensibly, did little about it. Such was the power of Capital.

As the world approaches the twenty-first century, one should be aware that not all Japanese embrace the new democracy now prevailing in Japan. There remains a hard-core of right-wing ultra-nationalist movements who, if they had their way, would welcome the return of 'thought police and militarism'. They have a fanatical belief that Japan should be the four roofs of the world and was the cradle of civilization peopled by a divinely endowed master race. Ever in opposition to modern reforms, a feature of their dogmatism is evidenced by the black vans which regularly haunt inner-city streets with loudspeakers at full pitch, blaring their messages of discord and intolerance along with reactionary slogans. A disquieting reminder that, like the neo-Nazis in Germany, their power has been crippled temporarily, but not their narrow idealism.

The question of double-standards in racialism deserves a mention. Japanese susceptibilities become quickly offended if one is so rash as to state that their ancestry stems from a fusion of Chinese and Korean explorers who discovered, occupied and peopled the country centuries before Christ. This is an anthropological fact and cannot be disputed. However, to labour this point is to invite vitriolic indignation from these self-proclaimed Asian-Aryans. There is a noticeable hostility or at best, divisiveness, that sets Japan apart from Korea or China – their distant ancestors, which no amount of logical argument can dispel.

Taken further, the Japanese tolerate in their midst Arabs, Caucasians and other Asians from the Far East, and south-east Asia – primarily as a consequence of economic expediency. Naturally, the Arabs are particularly welcome – as is their oil, but perhaps the most unloved race would be the very dark-skinned – an example being the Negro. They are clearly not welcome in large numbers as permanent residents in Japan through the fear that their natural concupiscence would result in a visibly noticeable skin darkening of their progeny and besides, the Japanese would not want to become like the United States, preferring instead to retain their uniqueness as a race and their national identity.

In many instances, the Japanese are an enigma. Inscrutable in their ways and sometimes difficult to comprehend. They do not have to get used to us, to the contrary, we have to get used to them, a nation of 100 million crammed into a group of islands scarcely larger than New Zealand, but emerging as one of the strongest industrial powers in the world – despite the scarcity of natural resources.

The life-blood of Japan is its exports of manufactured goods, therefore a downturn in the world economy or, increasing competition from other Asian countries would seriously affect its current economic performance which, since the post-war years, has been astounding. How long it will be before Japan's prosperity bubble bursts, only time will tell, though certain it is that while Japan remains prosperous is the time to seek compensation for its wartime Human Rights Abuses.

That Japan needs reminding is not because of its ineptitude but rather, its unwillingness to remember the past. Seemingly, Japan has the capacity to switch off and slip back a thousand years, oblivious and neglectful of its moral obligations to thousands of war victims. This idiosyncrasy is reflected, as convenience dictates, across the whole spectrum of Japanese rationale. Procrastination, devousness and prevarication appear preferable to facing up to reality.

A clear instance of this inherent mind-set is demonstrably exemplified by the former Japanese Education Minister, Masayuki Fujio, who declared that Japan's textbooks were 'not sufficiently patriotic'. He was emphasizing that Japan had nothing to be ashamed of during its bitter war of aggression – clearly brain-washing propaganda that, within the country, fell on receptive ears. Then again on 22 April 1988, the Minister of Lands, Seisuko Okuno, speaking at a ceremony at the Yasukuni Shrine, told a large gathering of assembled war veterans that Japan's war against China was not 'a war of aggression but merely an unfortunate incident necessary to maintain Japan's safety'. He continued, 'Japan was by no means the aggressor nation, it was merely endeavouring to promote better relations with its neighbour'. The resulting protest from the Chinese Government compelled Okuno to resign his portfolio, not because of what he had said, but because he had publicly embarrassed the Japanese Government.

How could the Chinese ever forget the Rape of Nanking? For Okuno to declare that Japanese aggression was actually something else, was prevaricative, blatantly insensitive and an affront to the Chinese nation. One wonders if the Japanese regard their south-east Asian conquests with similar sentiment and of no further concern. Truly, the Japanese mentality can be quite quixotic to Western comprehension. Though perhaps, some Japanese lack a conscience, with arrogance superseding shame.

This conundrum is but one interpretation of the Japanese enigma, employing a dual scale of values and standards uniquely Japanese.

Since this uniqueness carries no national or social stigma, it is an accepted norm of conduct though alien to foreigners who have no conception of the

Bushido or Samurai creeds. Then there is the art of adroitly using language skills, minimizing the preposterous to the innocuous and vice versa or, employing evasiveness to mislead. This behaviour directed at non-Japanese can prove to be most unedifying and without commensurate dialogue, frustrating.

Part of the mysticism of the Japanese uniqueness is its compelling simplicity. Their beliefs are shrouded in myths that are never questioned. All things Japanese stem from the Sun Goddess Amaterasu – not from Korea or China as Westerners prefer to believe. The Emperor, himself a God, despite Hirohito's renunciation, remained the Father of the Nation until Crown Prince Akihito succeeded to the throne. As the new Emperor, all the accolades attributed to Akihito from Amaterasu, the Sun Goddess, will endure well into the foreseeable future because, never did a line of Emperors have more devoted and loyal subjects than the Mikadoes of Japan.

The ability of the Japanese to accept myth with equanimity and a version of history distorted and rearranged that glorifies the Emperor's role as having brought peace to Japan, is to Westerners quite ambiguous particularly in view of the fact that Hirohito reigned over the longest warring Empire in the twentieth century. That such truth is omitted from school text books as well as the horrors of Japanese invasion of peaceful lands, is but another example of the country's uniqueness and refusal to face up to reality.

Is it any wonder, therefore, that after nigh on fifty years, the new generations of Japanese are reluctant to hear sordid and harrowing stories of aggression and atrocities, sworn to have been committed by their forefathers? Most of today's officialdom were at school in the 1940s and 1950s when Japan's defeat was strictly censored. However, the truth of Japan's wartime excesses is slowly filtering through the censorship regime of Japan's Education Ministry. Dark secrets cannot forever be contained nor should history be suppressed, even in matters concerning Hirohito's role as Emperor of a militant Japan.

It was thanks to General MacArthur that Hirohito kept his throne and was not branded as a war criminal. In response to President Truman's memorandum requesting notification of contingencies that might arise if Hirohito was arrested for war crimes, MacArthur was quick to respond by warning the President of certain internal disorder, guerrilla warfare, administrative chaos, the spread of Japanese Communism and the need to garrison hundreds of thousands of occupation troops in Japan indefinitely.

Truman's reaction to this advice from MacArthur would have been predictable particularly with the mention of the spread of Communism in Japan.

Whether it was deliberate or otherwise, MacArthur's specific reference to the threat of Communism persuaded the American President, along with MacArthur's recommendation to the effect that the Emperor represented stability and should remain as a symbol of unity despite his wartime misdeeds. Truman was left in no doubt with MacArthur's closing advice urging Hirohito remain as Emperor which was preferable to a revenge trial and the certain anarchy that would follow. Political expediency at the highest level, allowed a most reviled Head of State his questionable freedom that was to endure until the end of the Emperor's reign, forty-three years later.

With the passage of years Japan has prospered mightily. Those ardent nationalists and cupboard militarists who for years have dwelt on past glories and the expansion of the Land of the Rising Sun, have not been disappointed. Nine of the largest banking chains in the world are Japanese. The yen commands respect on the world exchanges, property consortiums own considerable holdings in foreign lands with hotels, golf-courses, tourist resorts and airlines. Merchant shipping lines operate to every part of the world as do whaling ships and fishing fleets that harvest the world's oceans. Such names as Suzuki, Nissan, Mitsubishi, Toyota, Akai, Sony and Sanyo are now represented throughout the world, as are huge forestry and pulp and paper conglomerates, and not overlooking a sizeable portion of the American film industry. Where to now one might ask? What more do the Japanese want?

As Marquis Kido extemporized in January 1944 — when Japan's tide of victories had turned to a series of disastrous defeats. 'The spirit of Japan can never be suppressed. It is written in our divine destiny. Looking over the future trend of the world, I believe that we must preserve and cultivate our real power in the State for about 100 years before embarking on conquest again.' Were Kido alive today he would be confounded to learn it took Japan less than half the time to achieve his dream though the word conquest is inappropriate to Japan's current prosperity. Where Japan's armies failed in their war of expansion, its economists have succeeded beyond their wildest dreams.

Throughout these chronicles a conscious effort has been made to interpolate the bizarre with as much informative narrative as possible in an attempt to minimize the harshness of reality against distressing circumstances difficult to avoid when exemplifying instances of barbarity. Here, then, is an instance of horror that was equal to anything the Nazis were alleged to have done.

A few days after the start of the battle for Saipan — a Japanese mandated territory in the Pacific, orders were drawn up in the palace to be relayed to the

Governor of the island, promising that all civilians who died there would receive the same honoured status as the defending soldiers who might die in battle. This inconcise Imperial message was taken to mean that rather than be captured by the gangster Americans, seppuku (suicide) was approved.

The Emperor, after the war, denied all knowledge of the instruction. But Imperial messages of this kind were never faked or enabled to pass the eagle eyes of the alert and efficient Court bureaucracy unless they were genuine and represented the Imperial Will. Regrettably, when the message reached Saipan, Hirohito's civilian subjects, all 10,800 of them, men, women, and children heeded their God Emperor's advice and climbing *en masse* to the highest cliff-tops, ahead of advancing American troops, hurled themselves onto jagged rocks hundreds of feet below rather than surrender. Shocked American news-cameramen, filmed this mass self-destruction in horrified disbelief.

Though this was a dreadful scene of mass suicide it clearly showed how orders were rigidly observed if given in the name of the Emperor. That Hirohito escaped punishment for this Imperial message which clearly came from the palace and by the Emperor's authority alone, remains a mystery to this day. The mass suicide of the civilians on Saipan, though a totally unnecessary disaster, could have been infinitely worse ending in total annihilation of every living creature on the island, had not fate intervened.

General Ishii, of 'Unit 731' notoriety, intended to release many hundreds of plague-ridden flea-carrying rats against the American attackers who had landed in force on Saipan Island. The fact that the rats and the fleas could not distinguish between a Japanese or American soldier bothered him not at all – in his line of business, human life was cheap. Fortunately, the Japanese ship transporting the 'Unit 731' squad to Saipan was torpedoed by an Allied submarine with only three survivors. The lethal cargo of 800 rats and thousands of death-dealing fleas went down with the ship.

After fierce and bitter fighting involving numerous banzai charges by the island's defenders, Saipan eventually fell into Allied hands, but of the 30,000 man garrison only 430 were taken prisoner – mainly rear echelon personnel. Most of the Japanese fighting troops died in battle. The few who were cut off or surrounded, committed hara-kiri rather than surrender.

The fanatical and ruthless General Ishii, commanding 'Unit 731' remained at his post in Ping Fan, Manchuria, almost to the last few days of the war and continued to supervise bacteriological and chemical experiments on the last of a dwindling supply of prisoners. But then, and in great haste following a field

radio report, he ordered the germ warfare facility destroyed. This included all the containers of deadly spore and virus cultures, poison gas cylinders, lethal bacteria and thousands of diseased rats – some of them hosting fleas carrying bubonic plague.

The reason for such haste was that the Soviet Union had entered the war against Japan with its armoured columns advancing rapidly towards Ping Fan. Everything that was consumable was thrust through the open doors of crematorium fires before finally attention was turned to forty shivering and fearful prisoners completely naked and awaiting their fate in catatonic helplessness – they were the last in captivity. General Ishii ordered their immediate execution which was swiftly carried out with injections of prussic acid. Their corpses were heaved into the crematorium furnaces along with the last remaining boxes of squealing rats.

Before fleeing the germ warfare facility, General Ishii ordered that containers filled with the ashes of thousands of prisoners, along with hundreds of jars of pickled human specimens, be dumped into the nearby Sungari river. That done he, together with twenty scientists and a strong detachment of troops, fled the area. A considerable time later but once more back in Japan, General Ishii, now in civilian attire, was interrogated by members of a special Allied prosecution squad with the intention of putting him on trial as a 'Grade A War Criminal'. 'Unit 731' became known as the infamous death squad and it was widely rumoured that Ishii would hang for all the murders carried out on his orders.

A conspiracy of interest was to save Ishii in a most unexpected way. Upon the assurance of General MacArthur that he would not be prosecuted if he told all he knew about the scientific experiments on prisoners of war, Ishii revealed the horrors in detail as well as compromising the Emperor unwittingly.

MacArthur kept his word and Ishii was released, nor were any of his subordinate scientists prosecuted. Back in civilian life, Ishii and his fellow scientists settled down to respectable appointments as lecturers in various Japanese universities with not a care in the world except their consciences.

That MacArthur could grant a pardon to such a group of scientific murderers responsible for some terrifyingly wicked deaths and mass murder seems extraordinary, but then, as Supreme Commander in Japan, he could exonerate anyone of war crimes including Hirohito – no matter how strong the evidence for the prosecution. Imperial Princes too, contributed to the list of war crimes that the world at large knows little about, but here again following a defined political policy, Imperial Princes were not prosecuted, thus making the war crimes trials,

in a number of instances, even more farcical by excusing war criminals from standing trial because they were of royal blood.

The Imperial Prince with the most infamous reputation outside of Japan was Lieutenant-General Prince Asaka, a senior member of the Imperial Institution and former commander of several infantry divisions in China. He, along with Major-General Heisuke Yanagawa, an officer subordinate to him, was responsible for the Rape of Nanking, one of the most barbaric events of the China War. Only a few days before the onslaught on the beleaguered city in November 1937 and as if anticipating a resounding victory over Nanking, Hirohito established a war-room complex inside the palace from where he was to follow all subsequent Japanese military actions with avid interest, particularly the Pacific campaign.

No major military, air or naval engagement escaped the Emperor's attention, and where Imperial Princes were involved his interest was said to quicken. Therefore, when news of the lusting massacres and capture of Nanking reached Hirohito's ears, he must have been dumbfounded with shock and outraged that an Imperial Prince could bring such odium on the Mikado of Japan. However, despite the Nanking atrocities and damaging publicity worldwide, six weeks later Hirohito and Prince Asaka played golf together – the Rape of Nanking probably far from their minds.

The sheer horror of the needless slaughters in Nanking, brought protests from world leaders and shocked the world. The Japanese military hierarchy made the military attack on Nanking the main subject of discussion for days afterwards but without criticism. Because Prince Asaka was the Emperor's uncle – he had married a daughter of the former Emperor Meiji, comment was confined to expressions of awe at Asaka's boldness and the conviction that such a courageous offensive would teach the 'Bandit Chinese' to cease resisting their new Japanese masters. The general reaction from senior officers in the field was one of admiration and emulation in other battles across China.

Prince Asaka merited prosecution and the death penalty after the war but, like Prince Fuminaro Konoye, another scheming war criminal and former Prime Minister, both avoided war trials, one by seppuku, the other by exoneration. Two more Imperial Princes eluded prosecution. They were the Army Chief of Staff, Prince Kanin and Prince Kuni – the latter, Hirohito's close confidant in the establishment of the germ warfare project and recruitment of scientists to staff 'Unit 731' in Manchuria. Each of these Princes in their own individual ways, eagerly assisted in Japan's war of expansion and were

accountable for war atrocities by virtue of the responsible positions they held – not because of princely titles.

Prince Fuminaro Konoye one of the chief architects of Korean subjugation and the relentless China War, was actually advised that he would soon be called before a War Crimes Tribunal. But early on the morning of 15 December 1945, rather than submit himself for interrogation, he took poison. Before committing seppuku he wrote a short cryptic statement of self-exoneration and told two close friends to convey his last message to Hirohito. 'Tell the Emperor,' he sombrely urged, 'to do the same when the Americans come to arrest him.'

Ironically, had Konoye but known, because of this stature as an Imperial Prince, the Allies merely wanted him as a material witness – not as a war criminal.

During the six years of Allied Occupation, no titled member of the Imperial Institution was tried for war crimes, such was the pervasive influence of Allied political intrigues. Imperial Princes, no matter how blood-stained their hands, benefitted from the same exoneration granted to the Emperor. Ethics and morality had, with all the Allies consenting, pushed principles to new levels of abasement that did not go unnoticed by the Chief Justice of Queensland Mr Justice Webb, who had this to say. 'I am highly critical of the selective and unnecessary immunities granted.' On another occasion he was moved to observe that 'Politics have not business in Courts of Law.' These were the views of an eminent jurist who presided over a War Crimes Tribunal in Tokyo. Clearly, the Chief Justice was dismayed at politics superseding justice.

It is clear that selective justice played a role and with the courts being told who they could or could not prosecute. Such political direction made a mockery of the War Trials and was in effect a conspiracy to circumvent justice. With hindsight, one is tempted to ask 'was the dispensing of principles a precursor to other political deals of convenience?' And one might further ask 'what other shady deals did the Allies agree to with Japan? Could Article 14 of the San Francisco Peace Treaty have been agreed upon to accommodate far-ranging political interests to counter Communism in Asia? What other reason was there for Article 14?'

Whatever deal MacArthur struck with Hirohito, certain it is that it included nefarious pardons for all the Imperial Princes – no matter what they were responsible for. Here, justice really was prostituted. MacArthur and Hirohito together, appear to history as two powerful war-lords who, with immense authority behind them, obliged each other's special interests in the cause, not

of justice particularly, but more importantly to the demands of intrigue and political expediency.

Justice was surely the play-thing of fate because in many instances it was either poorly, or never, dispensed. This why the Japanese Government of today continue to ignore and resist demands for compensation from victims for Human Rights Abuse. It remembers how MacArthur manipulated justice and exonerated the guilty just as clearly as it remembers the Allied powers exonerating Japan from all claims for its wartime human rights atrocities in the American-inspired 1952 San Francisco Peace Treaty. Thus the Japanese Government may have been assured that as several other countries' representatives also signed the Peace Treaty, then, if Japan was vulnerable and Article 14 of the Treaty was adjudged illegal, so too would be the countries whose representatives co-signed the Treaty.

Accordingly, by secretly uniting their joint concern, and standing firm, Japan and the former Allied Governments, would have in no way felt threatened. Their continuing collective political influence has been the best defence against compensation claims for the past fifty years and has enabled the rejection of claims thus far. If this hypothesis is close to the truth then only the United Nations has the power to challenge the legality of Article 14 of the Treaty. With hope eternal, the 'Forgotten Victims of War' should confidently anticipate an early decision and meaningful justice which has for so long been denied and which should provide far better expectations than what emerged from the 1952 Allied Japanese Conspiracy.

Rather than a period of soul-searching, contrition and restitution, Japan's post-war history has been marked by materialistic dedication to world-wide economic dominance. This ascendancy has been achieved by a ruthless disregard of its moral obligation to the hundreds of thousands of oppressed and dispossessed war victims who suffered unbelievable hardship and brutality under the protection of the Emperor's 'benevolence'. By contrast, Germany's economic success has been constrained by massive and voluntary restitution to victims of the Third Reich. Regretfully, Japan's greed and desire to attain what its military failed to achieve, has precluded honourable compensation and identifies a callous indifference by a former enemy that was treated so generously following its crushing defeat.

Those unfortunate people who endured unspeakable captivity can be forgiven for condemning Japan as a nation of heartless, deceiving and dishonourable people who took all the post-war aid shipped to Japan without so much as a

thank you. With its economic recovery assured by a generous and politically motivated America, the Japanese turned their backs on wartime responsibilities and their thousands of Allied war victims, with one objective in mind – to wage a new war, an economic one that included renewed expansion to a pinnacle of economic power that would confound and astound the world.

Supported by its new-age political friends, Japan continues to repudiate any liability for atrocities, massacres, rape, maiming and countless other bestialities inflicted by its rampaging soldiery in its war of conquest. It allows Government Ministers to test the waters of public opinion from time to time – this is no accident. It is a too frequent occurrence to ignore, though the latest response to Justice Minister Nagano's outrageous statements must leave the Government of Japan in no doubt that for all time, the history books of the world will remain unrelenting, much as Japan would wish otherwise. A nation which refuses to acknowledge its history and make amends, does not deserve the trust of the world in having one of its National's appointed as a United Nations Special Observer in war-torn Bosnia, let alone a seat on the Security Council that Japan covets – an ambition it is hoped will be denied.

The question of moral integrity and political honesty must be addressed. Because of the power of the yen and its astonishing economic recovery, Japan struts the world stage deliberately oblivious of its evil past and the huge moral debt incurred. The anger and resentment of its former victims is not difficult to understand – particularly in view of Germany's restitution for wartime atrocities. Perhaps the saddest commentary concerning Japan's arrogance, is the inescapable conclusion that an accommodation of political interests, collusion and conspiracy by the Western Powers, and a softly, softly approach by the media, contributed to the greatest perversion of justice in the history of the world.

What is difficult to comprehend, is the indifferent attitude of the media to Japan's unrequited war of conquest – could this be because of political pressure? Quite clearly, the chronicle of Japanese aggression does not fit into the popular mythology – most often printed, of Germany's role in the Second World War. To determine the reason for this is to examine the expediency and veneer of Cold War politics. The indecent haste with which Japan was re-admitted to international acceptance has got everything to do with the anti-Communist stance of its leaders – and its new political allies.

This anti-Communist collusion is no better typified than a report hereunder supplied by Reuters on 9 October 1994.

The CIA supported the Liberal Democratic Party, the conservative party that

dominated Japanese politics, with countless millions of dollars in a major Cold War covert operation during the 1950s and 1960s, the *New York Times* reported recently.

The Central Intelligence Agency gave money at the request of the LDP and its members to make the country a bulwark against Communism in Asia and to undermine the Japanese Left, the paper said, quoting former intelligence officials and diplomats from both the United States and Japan.

The Liberal Democrats' 38 years of one-party rule ended in 1993 after they became ensnared in a series of corruption cases.

Thanks in part to the CIA funding, the Liberal Democrats thwarted their Socialist opponents and fought off public opposition to creating United States military bases in Japan, the *Times* said.

The paper also cited United States Government records from the 1960s – the era of President John Kennedy – which it said were gradually becoming declassified in accordance with the federal law that required airing public records relating to foreign policy once they became 30 years old.

The covert aid apparently ended in the early 1970s, the paper said, amid growing trade friction between Japan and the United States.

The Liberal Democrats also drew support, the paper said, from retired diplomats, businessmen and veterans of the Office of 'Strategic Services', the Second World War precursor of the CIA.

A CONSPIRACY ANALYSED

The chronicle of events summarized in the preceding chapters would not be complete without a closing analysis that might explain, but not justify, post-war American and Japanese collusion. The Japanese Emperor's role should be scrutinized first as he was the magnet holding Japan together following its devastating defeat.

Emperor Hirohito was not as benevolent or benign or passive, as the Allies were led to believe. To the contrary he exercised his 'Imperial Prerogative' and affixed the Imperial Seal on the expansion of the Japanese Armed Forces – including the formation of the infamous 'Unit 731'. As a 'God Monarch' his edicts were adhered to fanatically. No major aggression or military decision was proceeded upon without Hirohito's knowledge. He was certainly not a puppet Emperor as Japanese apologists would have us believe. What then, saved Hirohito from the gallows?

The answer would have to be political and military expediency and a conspiracy involving the perversion of justice no matter the moral cost. It should be remembered that Japan unwillingly laid down its arms in response to one voice of command – that of its Emperor, no one else. This God-like influence did not go unnoticed by the Allies. It confirmed the suspicion, long-held, that Hirohito wielded immense political and military power equal to, if not more than, any other Axis Head of State. Despite this knowledge, the Allies avoided prosecuting the Emperor of Japan in whose name a most savage and prolonged war had been waged. Why?

Political analysts foresaw catastrophic consequences if the Emperor was tried as a war criminal. It was whispered in the halls of power that if 13,000 Japanese civilians would jump off high cliffs to their deaths, as occurred in Saipan in the devout belief that it was their Emperor's command, then similar self-destruction on a much more horrendous scale would be inevitable throughout Japan. Worse, an insurrection of the total population, numbering 100 million, would

be almost impossible to contain. Even worse, if Hirohito was found guilty, suicides by fanatical followers of the Imperial Dynasty would run into the millions. Also the Allies would have been compelled to garrison Japan with at least one million fully armed occupying soldiers – a daunting thought.

Thus was Hirohito spared the ignominy of a trial but, having chosen this path of expediency, that not all the Allied Powers agreed with, MacArthur in his capacity as resident Supreme Commander in Japan, gradually began to ignore whom he was supposed to represent. As history now confirms, it was politically wrong to invest so much power in one man who naturally, represented the political interests of Washington. That power corrupts is no idle adage. A similar representative command structure, as was imposed in West Germany, should have been instituted in Japan by the Allies – they were entitled to as much, but inexplicably, the United States (with its singular nuclear strength) called the shots and dictated policy in the interests of Cold War supremacy.

Between 1946 and 1952, deals were struck with Japanese war criminals that confound the world today. From the Imperial Household down to the notorious 'Unit 731', disgraceful immunities and exonerations were contrived. MacArthur was seen as being all things to all people. Only history reveals the character of this one man who held the destiny of Japan in his hands for nigh on six years.

As a young man, MacArthur trained at West Point where he led in the Academy's examination papers and won quick promotion. During the First World War he won the Croix de Guerre in France and the American Silver Star. With the return of peace he became Superintendent of the West Point Academy following which, and upon further promotion, he was posted to the Philippines. Subsequently, he was recalled to the United States and promoted to Chief of Staff at Washington. Here, temporarily at least, he met his Nemesis. Unemployed veterans of the First World War camped and demonstrated on the Anacostia Flats, demanding jobs and housing. Acting on orders but responding with ruthless zeal, MacArthur ordered the use of tear-gas to clear the demonstrators, an action that brought widespread criticism upon himself, compelling him to resign his position as Chief of Staff whereupon he returned to the Philippines and became military adviser to its President.

General Douglas MacArthur was recalled to active service in July 1941, and was appointed Commanding General US Army Forces in the Far East. It was Japan that America feared and in the event that hostilities might break out

between America and the Japanese, a large number of B17 bombers were sent to the Philippines to protect its many islands and territorial waters. Then dramatically, on 7 December 1941, Japan attacked Pearl Harbour while its Emissaries in Washington prevaricated over peace talks. Resultingly, both the General and Admiral in charge of the Army and Navy in Hawaii were relieved of their commands for having been caught unprepared. The utter destruction wreaked on America's capital ships at Pearl Harbour was to be repeated a few hours later at Clark Airfield, Manila, where the Japanese caught most of the US Army Air Force on the ground and totally obliterated it. Strangely, MacArthur was not relieved of his command.

The Philippines were vulnerable to a Japanese invasion, now more so that its powerful and protective umbrella of B17s had been destroyed, and so it proved. The Japanese 14th Army under Lt.-Gen Masaharu Honma invaded the Philippines. Out-manoeuvred by overwhelming numbers, MacArthur withdrew to Bataan before finally retreating once more to the island fortress of Corregidor at the entrance to Manila Bay – there to share the fate of the other defenders. By 22 February 1942, the military situation was hopeless despite the fact that against strong resistance, the Japanese were experiencing stiff opposition in their desire to capture Corregidor.

Finally, on 12 March, MacArthur, his family and some senior aides, boarded fast torpedo boats for Mindanao *en route* to Australia. One month later, the American and Filipino troops left behind to defend Bataan, surrendered to superior (in numbers) Japanese Forces. It took another month before Corregidor was finally overwhelmed. MacArthur's famous promise 'I shall return' did nothing to ease the bitterness of 88,000 troops, American and Filipino, who were subsequently captured by the Japanese. His departure, no less obvious than his parting orders to subordinates to 'fight to the death', while he fled, left him open to derogatory criticism by his rank and file, who, even to this day, remain bitterly contemptuous of his abandonment of command while they endured years of brutal captivity – that is those who survived.

Undoubtedly the Allied propaganda machine went into top gear upon MacArthur's arrival in Australia. In the field of image-restoring, the exercise was so successful that MacArthur with his cob-pipe, soft cap and heavily braided peak was swiftly turned into a hero. Further exonerating MacArthur's decision to flee Corregidor was the report that President Roosevelt had ordered MacArthur to escape to Australia. Clearly then, the choice was MacArthur's. He could have said that escape was impractical and remained with his men, but he

didn't. Other lesser generals, as history records, would have ignored the advice to abandon their troops and would have gained nothing but admiration, but then such is the power of propaganda.

It has been suggested in many quarters that MacArthur's appointment as Supreme Allied Commander in Japan, contributed vastly to his bloated egotism and with the certainty that power corrupts, found that his authority, higher than Emperor Hirohito, made him impervious to the constraints governing lesser mortals. His decisions to exonerate war criminals, particularly those connected to 'Unit 731', remain to this day, astonishing. Equally distressing is the knowledge newly acquired, that MacArthur was well aware of the existence of Japanese army brothels, but so horrendous were the graphic scenes described, and so numerous the brothels that when informed that at least 200,000 women and girls were involved, the enormity of such Human Rights Abuses and depravity reported, actuated a response from him that was typical. 'We've enough on our hands without that!' he was reported to have said.

Clearly, the Japanese have every reason to be eternally grateful to MacArthur. As Supreme Commander he constantly perverted the course of justice and in so doing, altered the course of history – in favour of Japan. It has been mentioned before but should be referred to again. MacArthur had forgotten whom he was supposed to represent. Not a few score thousand, but hundreds of thousands of servicemen and civilians who were captured or slaughtered by the Japanese in their bloody war of aggression. At war's end those who survived the Emperor's benign benevolence, and crippled in body and mind, were cast aside as if of penultimate consideration. They had suffered cruelly and because of the indifference of MacArthur, were destined to endure their nightmare of a living hell for the rest of their lives without just compensation. For this, MacArthur must stand forever condemned.

Thousands of Americans still alive today and who were taken captive by the Japanese, have nothing to thank MacArthur for. Simply stated, it would seem that once installed as Japan's Overlord, MacArthur switched sides as he succumbed to the blandishments, lies and deception of his cunning former adversaries. Significantly, and of telling importance, is the following condemnation issued by Mr Justice B. Roling, a Trial Judge at the Tokyo War Crimes hearings. Unhappily for Justice Roling, it was some years later before he learned of America's involvement – and thus MacArthur's, in perverting the course of justice by suppressing details of war crimes or in many instances, not pursuing them at all. 'Unit 731' being one example and the mounting evidence of

Japanese Army brothels another. This is what the eminent Dutch Jurist had to say.

It is a bitter experience for me to be informed 'now' that centrally ordered Japanese war criminality of the most disgusting kind was kept secret from the Court by the US Government per General MacArthur. To use human beings (Unit 731) for biological experiments . . . was among the gravest of war crimes.

Justice Roling was honest enough despite the passage of years, to condemn the perversion of justice either instigated or directed by General MacArthur. With such support, the allegations in this final chronicle brook no plausible excuses. Indeed, what more will the future years reveal?

MacArthur's final demise from the world stage and universal admiration came about abruptly. He chose to disagree with his Commander-in-Chief, President Truman, while commanding the United Nations Forces in Korea. Obviously his years of unchallenged authority and power in Japan, greater even than the Emperor's made him careless as to whom he was dealing with. Truman, who could be short-tempered and testy at times, reacted predictably at the challenge to his authority by MacArthur in 1951. Without hesitation the President sacked MacArthur thus effectively ending his career in disgrace. He died in 1964. Lamented then, but not so now.

Obviously not all Americans fell under the spell of Japanese duplicity. In 1986, Montana Congressman Patrick Williams initiated a Congressional inquiry. In evidence to the Pensions Sub-committee to the Congressional Committee of Veterans Affairs, he had this to say.

I am submitting the records for Felix Kozakevitch, an American soldier from New York who was imprisoned at a Japanese experimentation camp. Apart from severe beatings, Kozakevitch was subjected to frostbite experiments, forced to stand at attention in deep snow and in sub-zero temperatures. This war veteran never received compensation, never received needed counselling or for that matter, health care. The country for which he fought, denied his terrible experiences. Mr Kozakevitch died a year ago.

In further submissions, Congressman Williams pleaded for belated justice saying.

I have seen the evidence and I believe the truth is leaking out. These men

are victims of a terrible secret, born forty-four years ago deep in Manchuria in Japanese prisoner camps. These surviving soldiers and their barbaric suffering have perhaps been the best kept secret of World War Two – long denied by Japan and long concealed by the United States Government.

What was this terrible secret? Again we come back to 'Unit 731' and the conspiracy of silence between its murderous scientists and General Douglas MacArthur. No wonder Mr Justice Roling was angry, he had every reason to be. MacArthur on his part gave blanket immunity from prosecution to every member of 'Unit 731', despite the fact that most of them were murderers hundreds of times over. By means most foul, almost satanic, these arch-murderers were responsible for the deliberate execution, in the most excruciating manner, of thousands of civilians and Allied prisoners of war per the following methods.

Healthy victims were strapped to operating tables before large amounts of their own blood were drained off then, while in comatose shock, warm horse blood was introduced into their veins to replace that which had been lost. The victims of these so-called scientific tests were doomed to die because of the incompatibility of the victim's body and the horse blood. During these inhuman experiments, most of the victims suffered seizures whereupon, while partly conscious, vivisection took place. To describe anything further is too sickening. How the Japanese could justify this dreadful experiment – repeated many times over with other victims, confounds one's sense of propriety and humanity.

A virus to cause blindness was the last brain-child of these scientific monsters, but alas for the Japanese it was discovered too late for the necessary cultures to be proliferated in the laboratories at Ping Fan. Perhaps Divine Providence or the nearness of the approaching Soviet Army, prevented this crippling biological virus from permanently blinding whole armies and thus neutralizing them completely.

Among the many experiments carried out by 'Unit 731', the following disease cultures were tested on fresh prisoner-victims over and over again and always with satisfactory results.

Anthrax. Botulism. Brucellosis. Cholera. Virulent Dysentery. Gas Gangrene. Glanders. Meningococcus. Bubonic Plague. Plague Epidemic. Salmonella. Songo. Smallpox. Streptococcus. Syphilis. Tetanus. Tick Encephalitis. Tsutsugamushi. Typhus. Tuberculosis. Typhoid. Blackwater Fever. Yellow Fever.

Surprisingly and despite connived American and Japanese disbelief, the Soviet Union announced on New Year's Day 1950, that twelve Japanese war criminals had confessed to being members of 'Unit 731' based at Harbin and Ping Fan, an established link of biological facilities created with the express intention of waging germ warfare against the enemies of Japan. Further to the Soviet announcement, it was declared that the war criminals, mostly scientists, had confessed to murdering captive Soviet citizens with all manner of deadly infections and as well, had murdered countless other citizens unfortunate enough to fall into their hands, including American, British, Dutch and Australian prisoners of war.

The war crimes trial had been held at Khabarovsk within Soviet Territory and lasted six days. Following their conviction, the Japanese scientists were sentenced to various terms of imprisonment in Soviet labour correction camps. It should be noted that not all of the accused were scientists by definition. They were lumped together as such purely for translation purposes and possibly propaganda, to emphasize the evil the convicted Japanese had been engaged in either directly or in support.

Among the Japanese defendants was General Otozo Yamada, who had formerly been Commander-in-Chief of Japan's huge Kwantung Army – which included responsibility for 'Unit 731' and the supplying of prisoners for vivisection, disease injections and freezing experimentation. Yamada was sentenced to twenty-five years along with Major General Kiyoshi Kawashima, who had served in the experimental division of 'Unit 731' from April 1939 to March 1943. Also sentenced to twenty-five years was Lt-Gen Ruiji Kajitsuka, chief of the Medical Administration in the Kwantung Army. He was also a bacteriologist and a doctor of medical science. Lt-Gen Takaatsu Takahashi, who headed the Veterinary Division of the Kwantung Army also received a twenty-five year sentence – no doubt for supplying horse blood. For the other eight defendants, sentences ranged from twenty years downward.

Sad to say, a former Chief Prosecutor seconded to the War Crimes Tribunal by President Harry S. Truman, issued a strong rebuttal to the Soviet claims that the Japanese were engaged in advanced germ warfare research. He was Joseph B. Keenan, a personal friend of MacArthur and a man whose word was believed. 'The Japanese,' Keenan declared, 'had in no way been preparing for biological warfare.' Naturally this strong statement from the former Chief Prosecutor in Tokyo, carried considerable weight to the point where the Soviet announcement was regarded by many as an elaborate fabrication.

Consequently, Western newspapers gave the Soviet announcement little news space, if any. Thus, the survivors of Mukden and Harbin have fought fruitlessly for many years in their struggle to obtain compensation for what they endured in Manchuria. American, Dutch, British, New Zealand, Canadian and Australian servicemen are now more aware than ever that they were betrayed by their own self-seeking politicians in a conspiracy of deceit and treachery with a former unrepentant foe.

The yesterdays men, most of them now dead and who, while alive, conspired with Japan to conceal the existence of 'Unit 731' with all its horrors, have written themselves into the chronicles of history as 'Accessories After the Fact'. To know of wholesale murders but to harbour the perpetrators, invites the scornful accolade of collaborator if not traitor. No wonder that the dwindling survivors of Japanese horror camps find their own governments unsympathetic. To launch an inquiry would mean lifting the lid of a political Pandora's box with incalculable consequences that could be traced to Tokyo and Washington DC which could really upset the Western Alliance, once and for all.

Without the help of Soviet records, so much is now known about 'Unit 731' and the Allied cover-up of Japanese Army brothels, that nothing more, if revealed, would be surprising. Clearly, the former wartime Allies, but principally the United States, are reluctant to offend Japan, it now being the powerful and economic giant that it is. None the less, Japan has to be reminded of its unrequited and criminal wartime past. The yesterdays men are no longer around to conspire against justice or the pay-out of vast sums in compensation. The world needs politicians of the calibre of congressman Patrick Williams and many more like him to challenge the greatest injustice inflicted upon former prisoners of war of the Japanese the world has ever witnessed.

It is bad enough to have to contend with evasive lies, obstinacy and deceit from the Japanese in this day and age, but to have former Allied Governments protecting the 'Big Lie' that 'Unit 731' never existed is, in 1994, quite untenable. Proof is now available that among the many refined specialities of 'Unit 731', the following were the carriers or vectors employed as disease and plague disseminators. Flying beetles, feathers, flies, fleas, lice, leeches, mites, mosquitoes, rats and other small furtive creatures. Released in designated areas – especially the fleas – and carrying bubonic plague, casualties were certain to be high.

When documented facts are ignored, justice suffers. For too long has truth been suppressed by the former Allies, and it will remain in the shadows, seemingly, so long as Japan's objectives of expansion continue to compromise

the economic well-being of its previous adversaries. We must remind ourselves that the Cold War is over and that now, it's high finance, not politics, that dictates international policies. If a certain person in our thinking was betrayed for thirty pieces of silver, then for how much less were our Pacific war veterans and civilians betrayed? The answer to this question is obvious.

Moreover, it is certain that had MacArthur been more of a soldier and less of a Judas, and had the world known about the disgraceful magnitude of the Japanese Army brothels and the chilling facts about 'Unit 731', then, the 1952 San Francisco Peace Treaty could never have been signed in its present form. That both Japan and the Allies conspired together specifically to exclude all claims for Human Rights Abuses suggests even to the most naive, that all signatories to this nefarious Treaty knew precisely why this exception from penalty favouring Japan was included in Article 14 of the Treaty. Its inclusion no doubt prompted Mr Justice Webb, the Australian Presiding Judge to comment after the Tokyo Trials, the following.

'I'm not altogether sure that the Court wasn't misled or in fact deceived by those in political and military authority. Justice would not be well-served by the ends justifying the means, no mater how well intentioned.'

Mr Justice Webb's concern was to be proved well-founded with a subsequent Soviet announcement of the arrest and trial of 'Unit 731' war criminals.

With the Cold War over, it is time to acknowledge the integrity of the Soviet Union in its pursuit of Japanese war criminals without being disparaged and ostracized by the American State Department – previously a standard procedure. Regrettably, hundreds of Imperial Army war criminals escaped from certain Soviet justice to find shelter, anonymity and protection in their homeland that was occupied by an American wheeling and dealing Administration.

That these well-known war criminals were accepted with open arms by their own countrymen – despite their murderous past, says little for Japan's morality or conscience. Conversely, German war criminals – even those of less notorious stature, were hunted down relentlessly and still are to this very day by the reunited Federal Republic of Germany and Israel in stark contrast to the post-war Governments of Japan who have wilfully evaded the issue of prosecuting war criminals.

Immediately upon gaining post-war independence, the Federal Republic of Germany, to its credit, established legislation, without statutes of limitation, for the apprehension and prosecution of Nazi war criminals by German Courts. Alas, not so Japan. It has obstinately refused to prosecute its war criminals since

regaining self-government in 1951, nor has it addressed individual claims for wartime compensation by victims who suffered terribly at the hands of its Imperial Armed Forces.

This obstinacy can only be viewed as extraordinary arrogance by an unrepentant nation that has no regrets other than it lost its war in a crushing defeat. Such callous indifference must never be forgotten.

POSTSCRIPT: AN IMPERIAL CONFESSION

As recently as 7 July 1994, the brother of the wartime Japanese Emperor Hirohito, in a remarkable interview, told the *Yomiuri Shimbun* – a Tokyo based newspaper, that military chiefs suppressed copies of a speech he made in 1944 castigating Japanese atrocities in China. Prince Mikasa, then aged 78, declared that he spoke out at the end of an eye-opening one-year assignment as staff officer with Japanese expeditionary forces in the central Chinese city of Nanking (now Nanjing).

Among incidents that he said shocked him, was being told by a young officer: 'The best way to train new recruits is to have them undergo bayonet practice using prisoners of war. It helps them acquire guts!' Prince Mikasa said he was moved to write the speech, which criticized the Army's 'policy of aggression' and the atrocities committed against the Chinese people. Mikasa went on to say that he had an irresistible desire for the resumption of peace despite strong opposition from the Japanese High Command. He added: 'I heard that my speech was regarded by the general headquarters staff as dangerous – after I left the military conference, and that copies were confiscated and destroyed.'

One copy did survive, *Yomiuri* reported. It allegedly came to light after lying 'forgotten' for many decades in the Library of the Japanese Diet. It is remarkable that nearly half a century had to pass before finally, 'managed revelations' were exposed ostensibly to identify the good guys from the militarists. But why wait such a long time to tell the truth? The conclusion is obvious. So long as the Emperor lived, statements admitting atrocities – especially by an Imperial Prince, would have compromised Hirohito seriously and embarrassed the United States of America.

Controversy is beginning to surface in Japan over the truth about, and the responsibilities for, the Imperial Army's expansionist war across Asia and the

Pacific which has recently been high-lighted by an admission that Japan had indeed fought a war of aggression in Asia and the Pacific. This unwelcome revelation came from no less a person than newly installed Prime Minister, Mr Hosokawa in 1993. Rampant right-wingers (militarists), immediately denounced their Prime Minister and in May 1994, one of them tried to assassinate him.

For many years, Japan's education Ministry has ordered publishers of school history books to whitewash accounts of controversial wartime acts of infamy, and to be less than specific on China's claims of horrendous massacres carried out by Japanese troops including the deliberate execution of Allied Services Personnel and civilians in wilful acts of murder. The two most sensitive but deliberate slaughters – Nanking and the germ warfare centres in Manchuria, are described as regrettable but 'grossly exaggerated incidents'. Within the curricula of many Japanese schools and supported by the Goebbels-type whitewash of Japan's wartime criminality, students are warned to be on their guard against the harbingers of falsehoods who would wish to discredit 'Japan's fight for survival' during its efforts to protect itself from Western Imperialism in the 1930s and 1940s. Strangely, and despite this devious prevarication of history, the Japanese enjoy the laudations of a fawning Western press and the esteem of governments throughout the world.

A questionable aspect of Prince Mikasa's revelations was his patent hesitancy when asked to reveal wartime confidences he may have shared with his brother. The *Yomiuri* newspaper interviewer asked him if he had told the Emperor about what he had seen and heard in China.

'So far as I can recall,' the Prince replied, 'I didn't refer to anything in particular. However, I did report on the China situation in bits and pieces, primarily to give the Emperor the widest possible overview.' Mikasa went on to add, 'On occasion I showed Hirohito Chinese-made film of Japanese atrocities.' At least Mikasa gave an ambivalent version of reporting, in a vague sort of way to the Emperor, his understanding of events pertaining to China. But even in death, Hirohito was spared the taint of complicity.

The extent to which Hirohito supported or passively approved Japan's military expansion from the outset of his reign has been a controversial subject since Japan's surrender in 1945. Hirohito was once asked at a news conference: 'What do you think of your own wartime responsibility?' He angrily responded, 'That is a literary expression and I have not studied literature.'

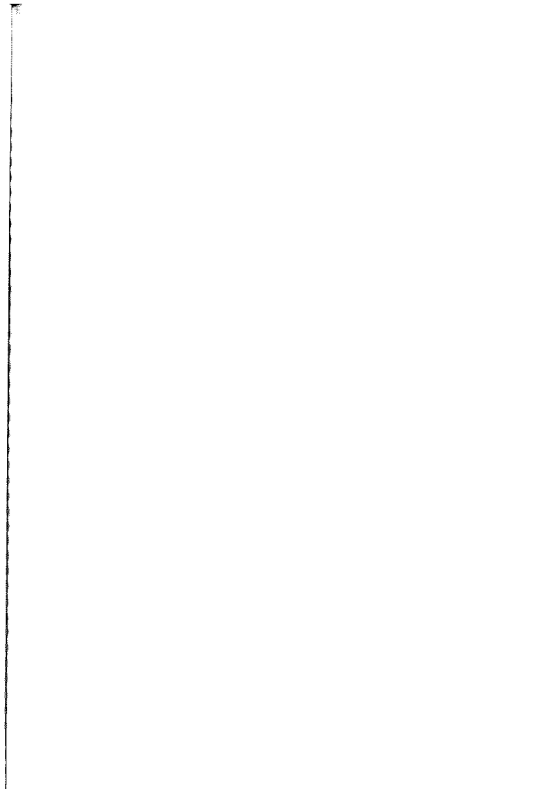
The evasiveness was not unexpected. Hirohito resorted to semantics to spare

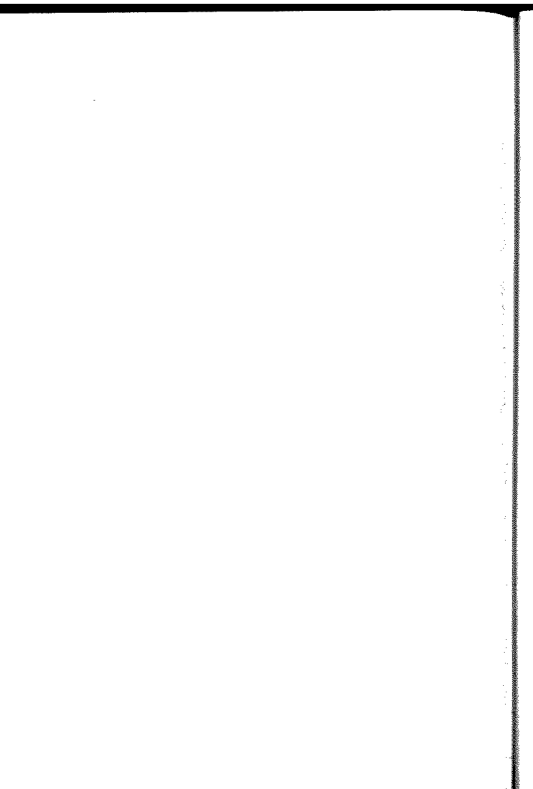
himself the pressure of answering straight-forward questions. The surprising and long overdue statement by his surviving brother, Prince Mikasa, merely helps to piece together what was already known but deliberately concealed until after the Emperor's death.

In time, the veil of secrecy surrounding the more bizarre cover-ups of Japanese war atrocities will finally be lifted revealing a jigsaw of deception and bastardization of justice that has endured for two generations. Also, will be the conclusion that Hirohito reigned over the most blood-thirsty Asian Empire in the annals of modern history. If ever a war criminal should have been prosecuted, it was Hirohito, the Emperor of Japan.

Finally, it must be categorically declared that Japanese intransigence, lies, deceit and prevarication, contributed to the prostitution of justice that wilfully circumvented the just claims of hundreds of thousands of prisoner victims who suffered appalling brutality and Human Rights Abuses at the hands of the Japanese. Until Japan makes amends and follows the example of the Federal Republic of Germany by providing compensation to its former victims or their next of kin, it will invite upon itself the odium and contempt it deserves as well as earning global distrust and bitterness of its own making. *The Allied Japanese Conspiracy* has attempted to expose a most despicable collusion of political skulduggery between the Allied Powers and Japan.

The anger and indignation of Far East veterans – so long stymied, is understandable. Undoubtedly the greatest indignity, and certainly the most difficult to comprehend, is the way in which the Japanese war of conquest – with all its vicissitudes, has been utterly ignored by world governments and the media. To discover the explanation for this is to question the very fabric of Cold War politics. The undue haste with which Japan was re-admitted to international favour had everything to do with the anti-Communist stance of its leaders – and their obstinate refusal to be held responsible for their country's war record and nothing to do with justice.







James MacKay was born in 1929 at Westport, New Zealand. Having been unsuccessful in his attempt to enlist in the Army, he joined, at the age of sixteen, the British Merchant Navy as a boy rating. Within five years MacKay had travelled the world several times, before deciding to explore the continents of South America, Africa and Australia. After journeying through Chile, Peru, Ecuador, northern Brazil, Venezuela and British Guiana, where he spent a period diamond prospecting, MacKay then went to Africa for three years, a considerable part of which was then under British administration.

But it was on the Andaman Islands in the eastern Bay of Bengal that he first began to realise the horrors of Japanese war atrocities, having been told of the hundreds of civilians who, allegedly, had been murdered on off-shore Havelock island's white sands just one day before Japan surrendered.

Further travels followed, including an extensive exploration of Malaya, south Borneo and Indonesia before, finally, MacKay travelled the breadth of Australia during which he committed further research, assisted by returned Servicemen, on the magnitude of human rights abuses by the Japanese to his copious diaries. Thereafter the author returned to New Zealand before resuming his career at sea. Following retirement he began, in earnest, to piece together and chronicle the first-hand accounts available to him, the murderous wartime conduct of the Japanese and the reasons for their cover-up. Married, MacKay is the father of eight children.